



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

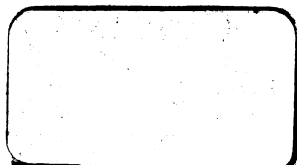
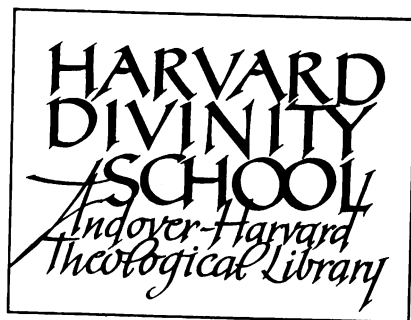
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>













THE  
**Precepts of Jesus**  
THE  
**GUIDE TO PEACE AND HAPPINESS,**

EXTRACTED FROM THE  
*BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT*  
ASCIBED TO THE FOUR EVANGELISTS.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED,  
THE FIRST AND SECOND  
**APPEAL TO THE CHRISTIAN PUBLIC**

IN REPLY TO THE  
*OBSERVATIONS OF DR. MARSHMAN,*  
OF SERAMPORE.

---

By **RAMMOHUN ROY.**

---

CALCUTTA, PRINTED:

**London,**

REPRINTED BY THE UNITARIAN SOCIETY, AND SOLD BY R. HUNTER,  
72, ST. PAUL'S CHURCHYARD; DAVID EATON, 187, HIGH  
HOLBORN; AND C. FOX AND CO. 33, THREAD-  
NEEDLE STREET.

---

1823.

(1180)

---

G. SMALLFIELD, *Printer, Hackney.*

BT

306

.R3

1823

## PREFACE.

---

THE works which are here presented to the British public cannot fail to excite much interest from the circumstances and character of the author. He has been for several years well known by name and reputation, both in India and in England ; but he has been known only as a learned and philanthropic Brahmin, the expounder of the religion, and the reformer of the institutions of his Hindoo countrymen. He now appears as a Christian professor, advocate, and controversialist.

Rammohun Roy was born about the year 1780, at Bordouan, in the province of Bengal. The first elements of his education he received under his paternal roof, where he also acquired a knowledge of the Persian language. He was afterwards sent to Patna to learn Arabic ; and here, through the medium of Arabic translations of Aristotle and Euclid, he studied logic and the mathematics. When he had completed these studies he went to Calcutta, to learn Sanscrit, the sacred language of the Hindoo Scriptures ; the knowledge of

which was indispensable to his caste and profession as a Brahmin. About the year 1804 or 1805 he became possessed, by the death of his father and of an elder and younger brother, of the whole of the family property, which is understood to have been very considerable. He now quitted Bordouan, and fixed his residence at Mourshedabad, where his ancestors had chiefly lived. Shortly after his settlement at this place he commenced his literary career by the publication of a work in the Persian language, with a préface in Arabic, which he intituled, "Against the Idolatry of all Religions." The freedom with which he animadverted on their respective systems, gave great umbrage both to the Mahommedans and the Hindoos, and created him so many enemies, that he found it necessary to remove to Calcutta, where he again took up his residence in the year 1814.

Two years previously to this period, he had begun to study the English language; but he did not then apply to it with much ardour or success. Being some years subsequently appointed Dewan, or chief native officer in the collection of the revenues, and the duties of his office affording him frequent opportunities of

## PREFACE.

v

mixing with English society, and of reading English documents, he applied to it with increased attention, and very soon qualified himself to speak and write it with considerable facility, correctness, and elegance. He afterwards studied the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages: of his proficiency in the two last of these he has given very decisive evidence in the tracts which are here published.

From his first work "Against the Idolatry of all Nations," it is evident that he had been led at an early period of life to regard with disapprobation the monstrous and debasing system of idolatry which was embraced by his countrymen. A careful study of the Sacred Writings of the Hindoos had also convinced him that the prevailing notions respecting the multiplicity of Deities, and the superstitious devotion to the licentious and inhuman customs connected with them, were grounded upon an utter ignorance, or gross perversion of their religion. These original records appeared to him to inculcate a system of pure Theism, which maintained the existence of one sole God, infinite in his perfections, and eternal in his duration; and that it required from its professors a mental rather than a corporeal

worship, accompanied by strict and exemplary virtue. Having embraced these views of the Hindoo theology and morals, he became anxious to reform the creed and practice of his countrymen, and determined to devote his talents and his fortune to this important and honourable undertaking.

The body of Hindoo theology is comprised in the Veds, which are writings of very high antiquity. On account of their great bulk, and the obscurity of the style in which they are composed, Vyas, a person of great celebrity in Hindoo literature, was induced, about two thousand years ago, to draw up a compendious abstract of the whole, accompanied with explanations of the more difficult passages. This digest he intituled "The Vedant," or "The Resolution of all the Veds," and it is generally esteemed as of equal authority with the original writings. This work Rammohun Roy translated from the Sanscrit into the Bengalee and Hindoo languages, for the information of his countrymen. He also printed an abridgment of it in the same languages, which he distributed gratuitously as extensively as circumstances would admit. This abridgment he afterwards translated into English, in the



expectation, as he states in the Preface, of proving to his European friends, "that the superstitious practices which deform the Hindoo religion, have nothing to do with the pure spirit of its dictates." Towards the conclusion of the same preface he explains the reasons of his proceedings, and intimates the personal inconveniences to which he had exposed himself by his benevolent zeal.

"My constant reflections," he writes, "on the inconvenient, or rather injurious rites, introduced by the peculiar practice of Hindoo idolatry, which, more than any other Pagan worship, destroys the texture of society; together with compassion for my countrymen, have compelled me to use every possible effort to awaken them from their dream of error; and by making them acquainted with the scriptures, enable them to contemplate, with true devotion, the unity and omnipresence of nature's God. By taking the path which conscience and sincerity direct, I, born a Brahmin, have exposed myself to the complainings and reproaches even of some of my relations, whose prejudices are strong, and whose temporal advantage depends upon the present system. But these, however accumulated, I can tran-

quilly bear; trusting that a day will arrive when my humble endeavours will be viewed with justice—perhaps acknowledged with gratitude. At any rate, whatever men may say, I cannot be deprived of this consolation: my motives are acceptable to that Being, who beholds in secret, and compensates openly.\*”

After the publication of the Vedant, Rammohun Roy printed in Bengalee and in English some of the principal chapters of the Veds, “for the purpose of illustrating and confirming the view he had taken of them.” †

In the preface to one of these tracts, (the

\* See “Translation of an Abridgment of the Vedant, or Resolution of all the Veds; the most celebrated and revered Work of Brahminical Theology, establishing the Unity of the Supreme Being, and that he alone is the Object of Propitiation and Worship. By Rammohun Roy.” Calcutta, 4to. 1816; 8vo. 1818; London, 4to. 1817.

† The titles of these pamphlets are as follows: 1. “Translation of the Cena Upanishad, one of the Chapters of the Sama Veda, according to the Gloss of the celebrated Shancaracharya; establishing the Unity and Sole Omnipotence of the Supreme Being, and that he alone is the Object of Worship.” Calcutta, 1816. 2. “Translation of the Ishopanishad, one of the Chapters of the Yajur Veda; according to the Commentary of the celebrated Shankar-Acharya; establishing the Unity and Incomprehensibility of the Supreme Being; and that his Worship alone can lead to eternal Beatitude.” Calcutta, 1816. 3. “Translation of the Moonduk-Opunishud of the Uthurvu-Ved, according to the Gloss

Ishopanishad,) after observing upon the superiority of the moral to the physical powers of man, and intimating that sorrow and remorse "can scarcely fail sooner or later to be the portion of him who is conscious of having neglected opportunities of rendering benefit to his fellow-creatures," he again adverts to his own case in the following terms: "From considerations like these it has been, that I,

of the celebrated Shunkura-Charyu." Calcutta, 1819. 4. "Translation of the Kuth-Opunishud, of the Ujoor-Ved, according to the Gloss of the celebrated Sunkuracharyu." 1819.

His other publications on the subject of Hindoo Reformation, consist of, 1. "A Defence of Hindoo Theism, in Reply to the attack of an Advocate for Idolatry at Madras." Calcutta, 1817. 2. "A Second Defence of the Monotheistical System of the Veds, in Reply to an Apology for the present State of Hindoo Worship." Calcutta, 1817. 3. "Translation of a Conference between an Advocate and an Opponent of the Practice of Burning Widows Alive, from the original Bungla." 1818. 4. "A Second Conference between an Advocate and an Opponent of the Practice of Burning Widows Alive, translated from the original Bengalee." Calcutta, 1820. Dedicated to the Marchioness of Hastings. 5. "An Apology for the Pursuit of Final Beatitude independently of Brahmunicipal Observances." Calcutta, 1820. 6. "Brief Remarks regarding Modern Encroachments on the Ancient Rites of Females, according to the Hindoo Law of Inheritance. Calcutta, printed at the Unitarian Press, 1822." The translation of the "Vedant," and of the "Cena Upanishad," were reprinted in London, in 1817. A review of some of these pamphlets is inserted in the Monthly Repository, Vol. XIV. pp. 561, &c.

(although born a Brahmin, and instructed in my youth in all the principles of that sect,) being thoroughly convinced of the lamentable errors of my countrymen, have been stimulated to employ every means in my power to improve their minds, and lead them to the knowledge of a purer system of morality. Living constantly amongst Hindoos of different sects and professions, I have had ample opportunities of observing the superstitious puerilities into which they have been thrown by their self-interested guides; who, in defiance of the law as well as of common sense, have succeeded but too well in conducting them to the temple of idolatry; and while they hide from their view the true substance of morality, have infused into their simple hearts a weak attachment for its mere shadow." After enumerating some of the evils arising from the existing theory and practice of Hindooism, and noticing the encouragement held out by it to every species of immorality and crime, he thus proceeds: "My reflections upon these solemn truths have been most painful for many years. I have never ceased to contemplate with the strongest feelings of regret, the obstinate adherence of my countrymen to their fatal system

of idolatry, enduring, for the sake of propitiating their supposed deities, the violation of every humane and social feeling. And this in various instances; but more especially in the dreadful acts of self-destruction, and the immolation of the nearest relations, under the delusion of conforming to sacred religious rites. I have never ceased, I repeat, to contemplate these practices with the strongest feelings of regret, and to view in them the moral debasement of a race who, I cannot help thinking, are capable of better things; whose susceptibility, patience, and mildness of character, render them worthy of a better destiny. Under these impressions, therefore, I have been impelled to lay before them genuine translations of parts of their scripture which inculcates not only the enlightened worship of one God, but the purest principles of morality, accompanied with such notices as I deemed requisite to oppose the arguments of the Brahmins, in defence of their beloved system. Most earnestly do I pray, that the whole may, sooner or later, prove efficient in producing on the minds of Hindoos in general, a conviction of the rationality of believing in and adoring the Supreme Being only; together

with a complete perception and practice of that grand and comprehensive moral principle—*Do unto others as you would be done by.*”

Although he experienced much opposition and discouragement in his work of reformation, he had the gratification of witnessing in many instances the beneficial effects of his labours. “It is with no ordinary feelings of satisfaction,” he states in the preface to the *Cena Upanishad*, “that I have already seen many respectable persons of my countrymen, to the great disappointment of their spiritual guides, rise superior to their original prejudices, and inquire into the truths of religion.” And again in his preface to the *Kuth Opunishud*, he writes, “The great body of my countrymen, possessed of good understandings, and not much fettered with prejudices, being perfectly satisfied of the truth of the doctrines contained in this and in other works already laid by me before them, and of the gross errors of the puerile system of idol worship which they were led to follow, have altered their religious conduct in a manner becoming the dignity of human beings.”—“It seems to me,” he remarks in conclusion, “that I cannot better employ my time than in an endeavour to illustrate and

maintain truth, and to render service to my fellow-labourers, confiding in the mercy of that Being to whom the motives of our actions and secrets of our hearts are well known."

The liberal views, and the devout and amiable spirit which are displayed in these extracts, and are indeed discernible in the whole of the author's writings, may be well thought to have disposed him to a candid examination of the Christian revelation. From the perusal of the New Testament, in his "long and uninterrupted researches into religious truth," he found, he asserts, "the doctrines of Christ more conducive to moral principles, and better adapted for the use of rational beings than any other which had come to his knowledge."\* The doctrine of the Trinity, however, which appeared to his mind quite as objectionable as the Polytheism of the Hindoos, presented an insuperable obstacle to his conversion to Christianity, as he found it professed by those with whom he conversed. But as the system so fully approved itself, in other respects, to his reason and his piety, his candour would not,

\* Preface to the London edition of the Translation of the Vedant. Monthly Repository, Vol. XIV. p. 562.

on account of this single difficulty, allow him at once to reject it as false. As the most likely method of acquiring a correct knowledge of its doctrines, he determined upon a careful perusal of the Jewish and Christian Scriptures in their original languages. From this undertaking he arose with a firm persuasion, that the doctrine of the Trinity was not inculcated in them, and that the Christian religion was true and divine.

Having now become upon deliberate and rational conviction a Christian, he hastened to communicate to his countrymen such a view of the religion of the New Testament as he thought best adapted to impress them with a feeling of its excellence, and to imbue them with its pure and amiable spirit. For this purpose he compiled the first pamphlet inserted in the present volume, which he intitled, "The Precepts of Jesus the Guide to Peace and Happiness," &c. To this work, which consists entirely of extracts from the moral discourses of our Lord, he prefixed an "Introduction," in which he stated his reasons for omitting the doctrines and the historical and miraculous relations which accompany



them in the writings of the Evangelists. Soon after the publication of this tract, there appeared in "The Friend of India,"\* a periodical work under the direction of the Baptist Missionaries, an article animadverting upon it, which was signed "A Christian Missionary," but written by the Rev. Mr. Schmidt. To this paper, Dr. Marshman, the editor of the magazine, appended some "Observations" of his own,† in which he styled the Compiler of the "Precepts," "an intelligent HEATHEN, whose mind is as yet completely opposed to the *grand design* of the Saviour's becoming incarnate."

These "Observations" produced the second of the following pamphlets, intituled "An Appeal to the Christian Public in Defence of the Precepts of Jesus, by a Friend to Truth." The writer is now known to have been Ram-mohun Roy himself. He complains in strong terms, of the application to him of the term Heathen, as "a violation of truth, charity, and liberality;" and also controverts some of Dr. Marshman's objections to the compilation, and to his reasonings in the Introduction. In a

\* No. XX. February 1820.

† London Edition of Dr. Marshman's Papers, p. 1.

subsequent number of the "Friend of India,"\* Dr. Marshman inserted a brief reply to this "Appeal," in which he still denied to the author the title of "Christian," because, he writes, "we belong to that class who think that no one can be a real Christian without believing the divinity and the atonement of Jesus Christ, and the divine authority of the whole of the Christian Scriptures," disclaiming, however, all intentions of using the term "Heathen" in an invidious sense.

Dr. Marshman, in his first "Observations," had promised to "take up the subject" of Rammohun Roy's work "more fully in the first number of the Quarterly Series" of The Friend of India, then in preparation. Accordingly, there appeared in that publication some "Observations on certain ideas contained in the Introduction to The Precepts of Jesus the Guide to Peace and Happiness."† In reply to this paper, Rammohun Roy published the last of the following pamphlets, intituled, "A Second Appeal to the Christian Public in Defence of the Precepts of Jesus." To this

\* No. XXIII. May 1820. Dr. Marshman's Papers, London Edition, p. 5.

† Idem. p. 17, Friend of India, September 1820,

tract Dr. Marshman printed an elaborate answer in the fourth number of the Quarterly Series of "The Friend of India."\* Here the discussion rests, as far as we are at present informed.†

Dr. Marshman's friends having collected, and printed in England, his Papers in this controversy,† it was thought by many to be demanded by truth and justice, that Rammohun Roy's pamphlets should also be given to the British public, to enable them to form an accurate judgment of the merits of both the parties in the support of their respective tenets. As there appeared no prospect of the work being undertaken by any bookseller, the Unitarian Society were induced to become the publishers. They are aware that, holding as they do the strict and proper humanity of

\* December 1821. Dr. Marshman's Tracts, London Edition, pp. 64, &c.

† The reader may be referred for some further particulars relating to Rammohun Roy, to the Monthly Repository, Vol. XIII. pp. 229, &c.; XIV. pp. 561, &c.; XV. pp. 1, &c.; XVI. pp. 477, &c.; XVII. pp. 682, &c.; and to Mr. Belsham's Introduction to William Roberts's (of Madras) First Letter to the Unitarian Society, 1818.

‡ The work is intituled, "A Defence of the Deity and Atonement of Jesus Christ, in Reply to Rammohun Roy, of Calcutta, by Dr. Marshman, of Serampore." London, 1822.

Christ as one of their fundamental tenets, they may possibly be charged with a dereliction of principle in thus circulating, under their authority, a work which maintains his pre-existence, and super-angelic rank and dignity. But they rest their defence upon the peculiar nature of the case, and upon their anxiety to give every possible publicity to so learned and able a defence of the great doctrine of the proper unity of God from the pen of a Hindoo convert to the Christian faith.

In reprinting the following pamphlets, the Calcutta editions have been strictly followed, except in a few instances, in which some obvious typographical errors have been corrected; and even the principal of these corrections have been inserted in brackets.

It is not intended in this Preface to enter into a review of the controversy. Dr. Marshman has, however, made a remark, which, as it refers to the Unitarian Society, we may be permitted to notice. In raising an argument for the Deity of Christ, upon the supposed application to him of the term "fellow" in the English translation of Zechariah xiii. 7, he thus quotes Rammohun Roy's criticism upon that text: "Unable to deny this, our author merely hints

in a note that *Immithi*, fellow, signifies one that lives near another; 'therefore the word, fellow, in the English translation is not altogether correct, as justly observed by Archbishop Newcome in his Improved Version,' lately published," adds Dr. Marshman, "by the SOCINIANS of England."\* Dr. Marshman has here allowed his zeal to outrun his knowledge. The work quoted by Rammohun Roy is not Archbishop Newcome's translation of the New Testament, which formed the basis of the "Improved Version," published by the Unitarian Society; but that learned prelate's "Attempt towards an Improved Version, &c. of the Twelve Minor Prophets;" a production well worthy of the perusal of every Biblical student.

It is with regret we observe that Dr. Marshman, who in general writes like a scholar and a gentleman, has, in the passage above cited, condescended to imitate the conduct of some low bigots on this side of the water, in designating the Unitarians by the term "Socinians," which, he must know, is not correctly descriptive of their opinions, and is generally employed as an epithet of reproach.

\* Dr. Marshman's Defence," &c. p. 133.

With almost the solitary exception of this deviation from liberality, it affords us great pleasure to be able to remark, that the controversy on both sides has throughout been conducted with a spirit of Christian candour and fairness, which is highly honourable to the able and learned disputants.

THOMAS REES,

*Secretary to the Unitarian Society.*

*Kennington, March 14, 1823.*



THE  
**Precepts of Jesus**  
THE  
**GUIDE TO PEACE AND HAPPINESS;**

EXTRACTED FROM  
  
THE BOOKS OF THE NEW TESTAMENT,

ASCRIBED TO THE FOUR EVANGELISTS.

---

WITH  
  
*TRANSLATIONS INTO SUNGSCRIT AND BENGALÉE.*

---

CALCUTTA:  
  
PRINTED AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS, CIRCULAR ROAD.  
  
1820.

---

LONDON, REPRINTED;  
  
1823.





## CONTENTS.

	Page
<i>The Precepts of Jesus the Guide to Peace and Happiness ; extracted from the Books of the New Testament, ascribed to the Four Evangelists</i> .....	1
<i>An Appeal to the Christian Public, in Defence of the " Precepts of Jesus" .....</i>	99
<i>A Second Appeal to the Christian Public, in Defence of the " Precepts of Jesus" .....</i>	131

#### ERRATUM.

Page 217, line 6: The author has inadvertently inserted the name of *Constantius* instead of *Constans*. It was thought best to leave the error uncorrected in the text, and to notice it here.

## INTRODUCTION.



A CONVICTION in the mind of its total ignorance of the nature and of the specific attributes of the Godhead, and a sense of doubt respecting the real essence of the soul, give rise to feelings of great dissatisfaction with our limited powers, as well as with all human acquirements which fail to inform us on these interesting points.—On the other hand, a notion of the existence of a supreme superintending power, the author and preserver of this harmonious system, who has organized and who regulates such an infinity of celestial and terrestrial objects; and a due estimation of that law which teaches that man should do unto others as he would wish to be done by, reconcile us to human nature, and tend to render our existence agreeable to ourselves and profitable to the rest of mankind. The former of these sources of satisfaction, viz. a belief in God, prevails generally; being derived either from tradition and instruction, or from an attentive survey of the wonderful skill and contrivance displayed in the works of nature. The latter, although it is partially taught also in every system of religion with which I am acquainted, is principally inculcated by Christianity. This essential characteristic of the Christian religion I was for a long time unable to distinguish as such, amidst

the various doctrines I found insisted upon in the writings of Christian authors, and in the conversation of those teachers of Christianity with whom I have had the honour of holding communication. Amongst those opinions, the most prevalent seems to be, that no one is justly entitled to the appellation of Christian who does not believe in the divinity of Christ and of the Holy Ghost, as well as in the divine nature of God, the Father of all created beings. Many allow a much greater latitude to the term Christian, and consider it as comprehending all who acknowledge the Bible to contain the revealed will of God, however they may differ from others in their interpretations of particular passages of scripture; whilst some require from him who claims the title of Christian only an adherence to the doctrines of Christ, as taught by himself, without insisting on implicit confidence in those of the Apostles, as being, except when speaking from inspiration, like other men, liable to mistake and error. That they were so is obvious from the several instances of differences of opinion amongst the Apostles recorded in the Acts and Epistles.\*


Voluminous works, written by learned men of particular sects for the purpose of establishing the truth, consistency, rationality, and priority of their own peculiar doctrines, contain such a variety of

\* Vide Acts, ch. xi. vers. 2, 3, ch. xv. vers. 2, 7; 1 Corinthians, ch. i. ver. 12; Galatians, ch. ii. vers. 11—13.

arguments, that I cannot hope to be able to adduce here any new reasonings of sufficient novelty and force to attract the notice of my readers. Besides, in matters of religion particularly, men in general, through prejudice and partiality to the opinions which they once form, pay little or no attention to opposite sentiments, (however reasonable they may be,) and often turn a deaf ear to what is most consistent with the laws of nature, and conformable to the dictates of human reason and divine revelation. At the same time, to those who are not biassed by prejudice, and who are, by the grace of God, open to conviction, a simple enumeration and statement of the respective tenets of different sects may be a sufficient guide to direct their inquiries in ascertaining which of them is the most consistent with the sacred traditions, and most acceptable to common sense.— For these reasons I decline entering into any discussion on those points, and confine my attention at present to the task of laying before my fellow-creatures the words of Christ, with a translation from the English into Sungskrit and the language of Bengal. I feel persuaded that by separating from the other matters contained in the New Testament the moral precepts found in that book, these will be more likely to produce the desirable effect of improving the hearts and minds of men of different persuasions and degrees of understanding. For, historical and some other passages are liable to the doubts and disputes of free-thinkers and antichris-

tians, especially miraculous relations, which are much less wonderful than the fabricated tales handed down to the natives of Asia,\* and consequently would be apt at best to carry little weight with them. On the contrary, moral doctrines, tending evidently to the maintenance of the peace and harmony of mankind at large, are beyond the reach of metaphysical perversion, and intelligible alike to the learned and to the unlearned. This simple code of religion and morality is so admirably calculated to elevate men's ideas to high and liberal notions of one God, who has equally subjected all living creatures, without distinction of cast, rank, or wealth, to change, disappointment, pain, and death, and has equally admitted all to be partakers of the bountiful mercies which he has lavished over nature, and is also so well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to God, to themselves, and to society, that I cannot but hope the best effects from its promulgation in the present form.

\* Ugisti is famed for having swallowed the ocean, when it had given him offence, and having restored it by urinary evacuation : at his command, also, the Vindhya range of mountains prostrated itself, and so remains. (*Wilson's Dictionary.*)



THE  
PRECEPTS OF JESUS,  
THE  
GUIDE TO PEACE AND HAPPINESS.

---

\* AND seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God. Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye, when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great *is* your reward in

\* Matthew, Chap. v.

B

heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? It is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and



whosoever shall say to his brother, *Raca*, shall be in danger of the council : but whosoever shall say, *Thou fool*, shall be in danger of hell fire. Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee ; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way ; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, whilst thou art in the way with him ; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery : but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee : for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee : for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement : but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery :

and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.

Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the Publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the Publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

\* Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the

\* Matthew, Chap. vi.

hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: for thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy

Father who is in secret : and thy Father, who seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal : but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal : for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The light of the body is the eye : if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness !

No man can serve two masters : for either he will hate the one, and love the other ; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink ; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment ? Behold the fowls of the air : for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns ; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they ? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature ? And why take ye thought for raiment ? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow ; they toil not, neither do they spin : and yet I say unto

you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? (for after all these things do the Gentiles seek :) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

\* Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye. Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under

\* Matthew, Chap. vii.

their feet, and turn again and rend you. Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and ye shall find ; knock, and it shall be opened unto you : for every one that asketh receiveth ; and he that seeketh findeth ; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone ? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent ? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him ? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them : for this is the Law and the Prophets.

Enter ye in at the strait gate : for wide *is* the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat : because strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles ? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit ; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the king-

dom of heaven ; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name ? and in thy name have cast out devils ? and in thy name done many wonderful works ? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you : depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock : and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell not : for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand : and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house ; and it fell : and great was the fall of it. And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine : for he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the Scribes.

\* And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many Publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with Publicans and sinners ? But when Jesus heard that, he said unto them, They

\* Matthew, Chap. ix. 10

that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. Then came to him the disciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast. No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish; but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

\* Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues: and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh

\* Matthew, Chap. x. 16.



in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child : and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake : but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another : for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come. The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household? Fear them not therefore ; for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light : and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the housetops. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul : but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. Think not that

I come to send peace on earth : I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me : and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it : and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward ; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold *water* only in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

\* At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father : for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father : and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father ; neither

\* Matthew, Chap. xi. 25.

knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*. Come unto me, all *ye* that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me ; for I am meek and lowly in heart : and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

\* At that time Jesus went on the Sabbath-day through the corn ; and his disciples were an hungered, and began to pluck the ears of corn, and to eat. But when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the Sabbath-day. But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungered, and they that were with him ; how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests ? Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the Sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the Sabbath, and are blameless ? But I say unto you, That in this place is *one* greater than the temple. But if ye had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of man is Lord even of the Sabbath-day.

And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue : And, behold, there was a man

\* Matthew, Chap. xii.

which had *his* hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath-days? that they might accuse him. And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* out? How much then is a man better than a sheep! Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath-days. Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other.

\* He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come. Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth

\* Matthew, Chap. xii, 30.

evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned;

While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his* mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

\* The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea-side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; and when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: and when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they

\* Matthew, Chap. xiii.

withered away. And some fell among thorns ; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them : but other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables ? He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given. For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance : but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. Therefore speak I to them in parables : because they seeing, see not ; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive : for this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed ; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. But blessed *are* your eyes, [for they see : and your ears,] for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them* ; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. When any one heareth the word of

the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the wicked *one*, and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart. This is he which received seed by the way side. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it: yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while; for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, by and by he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word; and the care of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word, and understandeth *it*; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some an hundred-fold, some sixty, some thirty. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man who sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? From whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of

harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: which indeed is the least of all seeds; but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof. Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened. All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable spake he not unto them: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept secret from the foundation of the world. Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man: the field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*: the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The



Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity ; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire : there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

\* Then came to Jesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders ? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, Why do you also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition ? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother : and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to *his* father or *his* mother, *It is a gift*, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me ; and honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free*. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with *their* lips ; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men. And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear and understand : Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man ;

\* Matthew, Chap. xv.

c 2

but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man. Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, after they heard this saying? But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. Then answered Peter and said unto him, Declare unto us this parable. And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding? Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witnesses, blasphemies: these are *the things* which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

\* And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread. Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no bread. *Which* when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread? How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it*

\* Matthew, Chap. xvi. 5.

not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees ? Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

When Jesus came into the coasts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I the Son of man am ? And they said, Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist : some, Elias ; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets. He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am ? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona : for flesh and blood hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father who is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church ; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven : and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven : and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ. From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and Scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord : this shall

not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

\* At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, and said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in

\* Matthew, Chap. xviii.

me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

Woe unto the world because of offences! For it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire. Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father, which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish. Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear thee, *then* take with thee one or two more, that

in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? Till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which

owed him an hundred pence : and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not : but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me : shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee ? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

\* The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause ? And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning made them male and female, and said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife : and they twain shall be one flesh ? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God

\* Matthew, Chap. xix. 3.

hath joined together, let not man put asunder. They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery. His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man be so with *his* wife, it is not good to marry. But he said unto them, All *men* cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

Then were there brought unto him little children, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: and the disciples rebuked them. But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto me: for of such is the kingdom of heaven. And he laid *his* hands on them, and departed thence. And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is*, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments.



He saith unto him, Which ? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and *thy* mother : and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth up : what lack I yet ? Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven : and come *and* follow me. But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful : for he had great possessions. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven. And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved ? But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them, With men this is impossible ; but with God all things are possible. Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee ; what shall we have therefore ? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or

lands, for my name's sake, shall receive an hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting life. But many *that are* first shall be last ; and the last *shall be* first.

\* For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that is* an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a-day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place, and said unto them ; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle ? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard ; and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more ; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received *it*, they murmured

\* Matthew, Chap. xx.

against the goodman of the house, saying, These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of him. And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom. But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father. And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren. But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that

are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you : but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister ; and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant : even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

\* And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things ? and who gave thee this authority ? And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it ? from heaven, or of men ? And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven ; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him ? But if we shall say, Of men ; we fear the people ; for all hold John as a prophet. And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell. And he said unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things. But what think ye ? A *certain* man had two sons ; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard. He answered and said, I will not : but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir ; and went not.

\* Matthew, Chap. xxi. 23.

Whether of them twain did the will of *his* father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him. Hear another parable: There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country: and when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of it. And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another, and stoned another. Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise. But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying, They will reverence my son. But when the husbandmen saw the son, they said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance. And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the vineyard, and slew *him*. When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen? They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read

in the Scriptures, The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner : this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes ? Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken : but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

\* The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding : and they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner : my oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready : come unto the marriage. But they made light of *it*, and went their ways, one to his farm, and another to his merchandise : and the remnant took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew *them*. But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth : and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as

\* Matthew, Chap. xxii. 2.

many as they found, both bad and good : and the wedding was furnished with guests. And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment : and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment ? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness ; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in *his* talk. And they sent out unto him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any *man* : for thou regardest not the person of men. Tell us therefore, what thinkest thou ; Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not ? But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypocrites ? Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny. And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and superscription ? They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's ; and unto God the things that are God's. When they had heard *these words*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say that there is no resurrection, and asked him,

saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were with us seven brethren : and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother : likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh. And last of all the woman died also. Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife shall she be of the seven ? for they all had her. Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob ? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living. And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine.

But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. Then one of them, *who was* a Lawyer, asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying, Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law ? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto



it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.

While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The Son of David*. He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord? saying, The LORD said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool. If David then call him Lord, how is he his son? And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any *man* from that day forth ask him any more *questions*.

\* Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and all ye are

\* Matthew, Chap. xxiii.

brethren. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, who is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even* Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted. But woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. *Ye* fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. *Ye* fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift? Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that shall

swear by heaven, swareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith : these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. *Ye* blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. *Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. *Ye* serpents, *ye* generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell ? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes : and

*some* of them ye shall kill and crucify ; and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to city : that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not ! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

\* Watch therefore ; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready : for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh. Who then ~~is~~ is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in ~~due~~ season ? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his

\* Matthew, Chap. xxiv. 42.

goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, *My lord delayeth his coming* ; and shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken ; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites : there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

\* Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish. They that *were* foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them : but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh ; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil ; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, *Not so* ; lest there be not enough for us and you : but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came ; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage : and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know

\* Matthew, Chap. xxv.

you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh. For *the kingdom of heaven is* as a man travelling into a far country, *who* called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made *them* other five talents. And likewise he that *had received* two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained besides them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping

where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed : and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth : lo, *there* thou hast *that* *is* thine. His lord answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed : thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance : but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness : there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory : and before him shall be gathered all nations : and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats : and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world : for I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink : I was a stranger, and ye took me in : naked, and ye clothed me : I was sick, and ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the

righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee* ? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink ? When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in ? or naked, and clothed *thee* ? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee ? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels : for I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink : I was a stranger, and ye took me not in : naked, and ye clothed me not : sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee ? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment : but the righteous into life eternal.

\* And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples : for there were many, and they followed him. And when the Scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans

\* Mark, Chap. ii. 15.



and sinners, they said unto his disciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and sinners? When Jesus heard *it*, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. And the disciples of John and of the Pharisees used to fast: and they come and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days. No man also seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that filled it up taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worse. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles: else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred: but new wine must be put into new bottles.

And it came to pass, that he went through the corn-fields on the Sabbath-day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the Sabbath-day that which is not lawful? And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungered, he, and they that were with him? How he went into the house of

God in the days of Abiathar the High Priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful to eat but for the Priests, and gave also to them which were with him? And he said unto them, The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath : therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

\* There came then his brethren and his mother, and, standing without, sent unto him, calling him. And the multitude sat about him, and they said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee. And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren? And he looked round about on them, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren! For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

† And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine, Hearken ; Behold, there went out a sower to sow : and it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way side, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth : and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth : but when the sun was up, it was scorched ; and because it had no root, it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased : and brought forth, some thirty, and

\* Mark, Chap. iii. 31.

† Mark, Chap. iv. 2.

some sixty, and some an hundred. And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was alone, they that were about him with the twelve asked of him the parable. And he said unto them, Unto you it is given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God : but unto them that are without, all *these* things are done in parables : That seeing they may see, and not perceive ; and hearing they may hear, and not understand ; lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven them. And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable ? and how then will ye know all parables ? The sower soweth the word. And these are they by the way side, where the word is sown ; but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their hearts. And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground ; who, when they have heard the word, immediately receive it with gladness : and have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time : afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offended. And these are they which are sown among thorns ; such as hear the word, and the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful. And these are they which are sown in good ground ; such as hear the word, and receive *it*, and bring forth fruit, some thirtyfold, some sixty, and some an hundred. And

he said unto them, Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed, and not to be set on a candlestick? For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. And he saith unto them, Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath. And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground; and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come. And he said, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? *It* is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is less than all the seeds that be in the earth: but when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches; so that the fowls of the air may lodge under the shadow of it.

\* Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked him,

\* Mark, Chap. vii. [5.] 6.

Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men. For, laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots and cups : and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother ; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death : but ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, *It is* Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me ; *he shall be free*. And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or his mother ; making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered : and many such like things do ye. And when he had called all the people *unto him*, he said unto them, Harken unto me every one *of you*, and understand : there is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him : but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. And he saith

unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, *it* cannot defile him; because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats! And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: all these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

\* And when he had called the people *unto him* with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the Gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels.

† And he came to Capernaum: and being in the house he asked them, What was it that ye disputed

\* Mark, Chap. viii. 34.

† Mark, Chap. ix. 33.

among yourselves by the way? But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest. And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and servant of all. And he took a child, and set him in the midst of them: and when he had taken him into his arms, he said unto them, Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me.

And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us: and we forbad him, because he followeth not us. But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is not against us is on our part. For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea. And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast

E

into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched : where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out : it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire : where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good : but if the salt have lost its saltness, wherewith will ye season it ? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

\* And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them : and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*. But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not ; for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.

And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life ? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good ? *there is* none good but one, *that is*, God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not steal, Do not

\* Mark, Chap. x. 13.



bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother. And he answered and said unto him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth. Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, take up the cross, and follow me. And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions. And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? And Jesus looking upon them saith, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible. Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee. And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, but he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and

lands, with persecutions ; and in the world to come eternal life. But many *that are* first shall be last ; and the last first.

\* And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire. And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you ? They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory. But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask : can ye drink of the cup that I drink of ? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with ? And they said unto him, We can. And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of ; and with the baptism that I am baptized with shall ye be baptized : but to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give ; but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared. And when the ten heard *it*, they began to be much displeased with James and John. But Jesus called them *to him*, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them ; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you : but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister : and whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man

\* Mark, Chap. x. 35.

came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

\* Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*. And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

† And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words. And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth: Is it lawful to give tribute to Cæsar, or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said unto them, Why tempt ye me? Bring me a penny, that I may see *it*. And they brought *it*. And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image and superscription? And they said unto him, Cæsar's. And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him. Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say there is no resurrection: and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man's brother die, and

\* Mark, Chap. xi. 24.

† Mark, Chap. xii. 13.

leave *his* wife *behind him*, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were seven brethren : and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed. And the second took her, and died, neither left he any seed : and the third likewise. And the seven had her, and left no seed : last of all the woman died also. In the resurrection, therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them ? for the seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering said unto them, Do ye not therefore err, because ye know not the Scriptures, neither the power of God ? For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage ; but are as the angels which are in heaven. And as touching the dead, that they rise : have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I *am* the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob ? He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living : ye therefore do greatly err. And one of the Scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all ? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel ; The Lord our God is one Lord : and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength : this *is* the first commandment. And the second *is* like, *namely* this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as

thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. And the Scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

\* And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. And he called *unto him* his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the treasury: for all *they* did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

† And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

\* Mark, Chap. xi. [xii.] 41.

† Luke, Chap. iv. 16.

The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the Gospel to the poor ; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son ? And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself : whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land : but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, *a city* of Sidon, unto a woman *that was* a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet ; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian.

\* But their Scribes and Pharisees murmured

\* Luke, Chap. vi. [v.] 30.

against his disciples, saying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? And Jesus answering said unto them, They that are whole need not a physician; but they that are sick. I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance. And he spake also a parable unto them; No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new agreeth not with the old. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old *wine* straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

\* And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that he went through the corn fields; and his disciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands. And certain of the Pharisees said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-days? And Jesus answering them said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungered, and they which were with him; how he went into the house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him; which it is not lawful to eat but for the Priests alone?

\* Luke, Chap. vi. 1.

And he said unto them, That the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught : and there was a man whose right hand was withered. And the Scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day ; that they might find an accusation against him. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing ; Is it lawful on the sabbath-day to do good, or to do evil ? to save life, or to destroy it ?

\* And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be ye* poor : for yours is the kingdom of God. Blessed *are ye* that hunger now : for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are ye* that weep now : for ye shall laugh. Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you*, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy : for, behold, your reward *is* great in heaven : for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. But woe unto you that are rich ! for ye have received your consolation. Woe unto you that are full ! for ye

\* Luke, Chap. vi. 20.



shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets. But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not *to take thy* coat also. Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* not again. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and *to* the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For

with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again. And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect shall be as his master. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite! cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye. For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. For every tree is known by its own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: he is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it; for it was founded upon a rock. But

he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth ; against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell ; and the ruin of that house was great.

\* And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind *him* weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him ; for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. There was a certain creditor which had two debtors : the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most ? Simon answered and said, I suppose that *he* to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. And he turned to the woman, and

\* Luke, Chap. vii. 36.

said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kiss my feet. Mine head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

\* And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable: A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when he [had] said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And his disciples asked him, saying, What might this

\* Luke, Chap. viii. 4.

parable be? And he said, Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God : but to others in parables ; that seeing they might not see, and hearing they might not understand. Now the parable is this : The seed is the word of God. Those by the way side are they that hear ; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should believe and be saved. They on the rock *are they*, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy ; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away. And that which fell among thorns are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection. But that on the good ground are they, which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience. No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed ; but setteth *it* on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest ; neither *any thing* hid, that shall not be known and come abroad. Take heed therefore how ye hear : for whosoever hath, to him shall be given ; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

Then came to him *his* mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the press. And it was told him *by certain* which said, Thy mother and

thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee. And he answered and said unto them, My mother and my brethren are these which hear the word of God, and do it.

\* Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest. And Jesus, perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and set him by him, and said unto them, Whosoever shall receive this child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him that sent me: for he that is least among you all, the same shall be great. And John answered and said, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name; and we forbad him, because he followeth not with us. And Jesus said unto him, Forbid *him* not: for he that is not against us, is for us.

And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he stedfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem, and sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is

\* Luke, Chap. ix. 46.

not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain *man* said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air *have* nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head. And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

\* After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself would come. Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly *is* great, but the labourers *are* few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house. And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall

\* Luke, Chap. x. 1.

rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city. Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell. He that heareth you, heareth me; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

\* And, behold, a certain Lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is

\* Luke, Chap. x. 25.



written in the law ? how readest thou ? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind ; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right : this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour ? And Jesus answering said, A certain *man* went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half dead. And by chance there came down a certain Priest that way : and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was : and when he saw him, he had compassion *on him*, and went to *him*, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him ; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto *him* that fell among the thieves ? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

\* Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village : and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? Bid her therefore that she help me. And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things : but one thing is needful : and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

† And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins ; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation ; but deliver us from evil. And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves ; for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and

\* Luke, Chap. x. 38.

† Luke, Chap. xi. 1.

I have nothing to set before him? And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee. I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth. And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? Or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye, then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children; how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him!

\* And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked. But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

† No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see

\* Luke, Chap. xi. 27.

† Luke, Chap. xi. 33.

the light. The light of the body is the eye : therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light ; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also *is* full of darkness. Take heed therefore that the light which is in thee be not darkness. If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him : and he went in, and sat down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter ; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. *Ye* fools, did not he that made that which is without make that which is within also ? But rather give alms of such things as you have ; and, behold, all things are clean unto you. But woe unto you, Pharisees ! for ye tithe mint and rue and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God : these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Woe unto you, Pharisees ! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not aware of *them*. Then answered one of the Lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also. And he said, Woe unto

you also, *ye* Lawyers ! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Woe unto you ! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. Truly ye bear witness that ye allow the deeds of your fathers : for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said the wisdom of God; I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute : that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation ; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple : verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation. Woe unto you, Lawyers ! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge : ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

\* In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, inso-much that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; neither hid, that shall not be known. Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness shall be heard in the light ; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-

\* Luke, Chap. xii. 1.

tops. And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear : Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? and not one of them is forgotten before God : but even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not, therefore : ye are of more value than many sparrows. Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God : but he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him : but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say : for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say. And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you ? And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness : for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought

forth plentifully: and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. But God said unto him, *Thou* fool! this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich towards God. And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap; which neither have storehouse nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls! And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then God so clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven; how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith! And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of

doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that [ye] have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God; and all these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. Sell that ye have, and give alms; provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord, when he cometh, shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* so, blessed are those servants. And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not. Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all? And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward,



whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; the lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more. I am come to send fire on the earth: and what will I, if it be already kindled? but I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: for from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law

against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower ; and so it is. And when *ye see* the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat ; and it cometh to pass. *Ye* hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky and of the earth ; but how is it that ye do not discern this time ? Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right ? When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him ; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

\* There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things ? I tell you, Nay ; but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem ? I tell you, Nay : but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. He spake also this parable ; A certain *man* had a fig-

\* Luke, Chap. xiii. 1.

tree planted in his vineyard : and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none : cut it down ; why cumbereth it the ground ? And he he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung *it* : and if it bear fruit, *well* : and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down.

\* And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work : in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day. The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou* hypocrite ! doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering ? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day ? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed : and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like ? and whereunto shall I resemble it ? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden ; and it grew, and waxed a great

\* Luke, Chap. xiii. [14,] 17.

tree ; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it. And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God ? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved ? And he said unto them, Strive to enter in at the strait gate : for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us ; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are : then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are ; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you *yourselves* thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and *from* the west, and from the north, and *from* the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence : for Herod will kill thee. And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils,

and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected. Nevertheless I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the *day* following : for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee ; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth gather* her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not ! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate : and verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until *the time* come when ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

\* And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him. And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. And Jesus answering spake unto the Lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day ? And they held their peace. And he took *him*, and he healed him, and let him go ; and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day ? And they could not answer him again to these things. And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms ; saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest

\* Luke, Chap. xiv. 1.

room ; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him ; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place ; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room ; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher : then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased ; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours ; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind : and thou shalt be blessed ; for they cannot recompense thee : for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just. And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed *is* he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many : and sent his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come ; for all things are now ready. And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it : I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove

them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. And the Lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them, If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*? Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king, going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or

else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple. Salt is good : but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned ? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill ; *but* men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

\* Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. And the Pharisees and Scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them. And he spake this parable unto them, saying, What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it ? And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me ; for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons which need no repentance. Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it* ? And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together,

\* Luke, Chap. xv. 1.



saying, Rejoice with me ; for I have found the piece which I had lost. Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth. And he said, A certain man had two sons : and the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth *to me*. And he divided unto them *his* living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land ; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country ; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat : and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger ! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son : make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him ;

and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet: and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him. And he answering said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: but as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

\* And he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy

\* Luke, Chap. xiii. [xvi.] 1.

stewardship ; for thou mayest be no longer steward. Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do, for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship ? I cannot dig ; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord ? And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much owest thou ? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely : for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light. And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness : that, when ye fail, they may receive you unto everlasting habitations. He that is faithful in that which is least is faithful also in much : and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches* ? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own ? No servant can serve two masters : for either he will hate the one, and love the other ; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mam-

mon. And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him. And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed amongst men is abomination in the sight of God. The Law and the Prophets *were* until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth adultery. There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but

now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

\* Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe *unto him*, through whom they come! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him. And the Apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this syc-

\* Luke, Chap. xvii. 1.

mine-tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you. But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat? and will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

\* And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always *to pray*, and not to faint; saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily.

\* Luke, Chap. xviii. 1.

Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself: God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this Publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the Publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased: and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein.

And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none *is* good, save one, *that is*, God. Thou knowest the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do

not kill, Do not steal, Do not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother. And he said, All these have I kept from my youth up. Now when Jesus heard these things, he said unto him, Yet lackest thou one thing: sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come, follow me. And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich. And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! For it is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. And they that heard *it* said, Who then can be saved? And he said, The things which are impossible with men are possible with God. Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting.

\* He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not

\* Luke, Chap. xix. 12.



have this *man* to reign over us. And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant : because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin : for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man : thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow : wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury ? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given ; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. But those mine

enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

\* And the Chief Priests and the Scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him ; and they feared the people : for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them. And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor. And they asked him, saying, Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of God truly : Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or no ? But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me ? Shew me a penny. Whose image and superscription hath it ? They answered and said, Cæsar's. And he said unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which be Cæsar's, and unto God the things which be God's. And they could not take hold of his words before the people : and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace. Then came to *him* certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any resurrection ; and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife, and

\* Luke, Chap. xx. [19.] 20.

raise up seed unto his brother. There were therefore seven brethren : and the first took a wife, and died without children. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third took her; and in like manner the seven also : and they left no children, and died. Last of all the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage : but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage : neither can they die any more : for they are equal unto the angels ; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living : for all live unto him. Then certain of the Scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said.

\* And he looked up, and saw the rich men casting their gifts into the treasury. And he saw also a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites. And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they all : for all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of

\* Luke, Chap. xxi. 1.

God : but she of her penury hath cast in all the living that she had.

\* There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews : the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God : for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old ? Can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born ? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh ; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth : so is every one that is born of the Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be ? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things ? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen ; and ye receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye

\* John, Chap. iii. 1.

believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you *of* heavenly things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, *even* so must the Son of man be lifted up: that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

\* But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth.

\* John, Chap. iv. 23.

\* Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you : for him hath God the Father sealed.

† And the Scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery ; and when they had set her in the midst, they say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned : but what sayest thou ? This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not*. So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last : and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers ? Hath no man condemned thee ? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee : go, and sin no more.

‡ And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into

\* John, Chap. vi. 27.

† John, Chap. viii. 3.

‡ John, Chap. ix. 39.

this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

\* I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: he that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's

\* John, Chap. xv. 1.

commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full. This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye love one another.

---



0

**An Appeal**

TO

**THE CHRISTIAN PUBLIC,**

IN DEFENCE OF THE

***"PRECEPTS OF JESUS."***

---

BY

**A FRIEND TO TRUTH.**

*Pamphlet Boy*

**PRINTED AT CALCUTTA:**

**1820.**

---

**LONDON, REPRINTED:**

**1823.**



## AN APPEAL,

8c. 8c.

---

IN perusing the twentieth number of "The Friend of India," I felt as much surprised as disappointed at some remarks made in that magazine by a gentleman under the signature of "A Christian Missionary," on a late publication, intitled, "The Precepts of Jesus;" and also at some observations of a similar nature on the same subject by the Editor of that publication. Before, however, I attempt to enquire into the ground upon which their objections to the work in question are founded, I humbly beg to appeal to the public against the unchristianlike, as well as uncivil manner in which the Editor has adduced his objections to the compilation, by introducing personality, and applying the term of *heathen* to the Compiler. I say unchristianlike manner, because the Editor, by making use of the term heathen, has, I presume, violated truth, charity, and liberality, which are essential to Christianity in every sense of the word. For there are only two methods by which the character of the Compiler as a heathen, or as a believer in one true and living God, can be satisfactorily inferred. The most reasonable of the two modes is to confine such

enquiries to the evidence contained in the subject of review, no mention of the name of the Compiler being made in the publication itself. Another mode, which is obviously ~~inapplicable~~ in such discussions, is to guess at the real author, and to infer his opinions from a knowledge of his education or other circumstances. With respect to the first source of evidence, the following expressions of the Compiler's sentiments are found in the Introduction. "A notion of the existence of a Supreme Superintending Power, the author and preserver of the harmonious system, who has organized and who regulates such an infinity of celestial and terrestrial objects, and a due estimation of that law which teaches that man should do to others as he would wish to be done by, reconcile us to human nature, &c." "This simple code of religion and morality, (meaning the Precepts of Jesus,) is so admirably calculated to elevate men's ideas to high and liberal notions of one God, &c." "so well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to God, to themselves, and to society," and "so conformable to the dictates of human reason and divine revelation, &c." These expressions are calculated, in my humble opinion, to convince every mind not biassed by prejudice, that the Compiler believed not only in one God, whose nature and essence is beyond human comprehension, but in the truths revealed in the Christian system. I should hope neither the Reviewer nor the Editor can be justified in inferring

the heathenism of the Compiler, from the facts of his extracting and publishing the moral doctrines of the New Testament, under the title of "A Guide to Peace and Happiness"—his styling the Precepts of Jesus, a code of religion and morality—his believing God to be the author and preserver of the universe—or his considering those sayings as adapted to regulate the conduct of the whole human race in the discharge of all the duties required of them.

Neither, I trust, can his separating the moral sayings of Christ from the mysterious dogmas and historical parts of the New Testament, under the impression, that these are liable to the doubts and disputes of freethinkers and antichristians, with which this part of the world is unfortunately filled; nor his opinion that this simple code of morality would be more likely to attract the notice and respect of such men, and to guide their minds into the paths of peace and happiness, than if presented to them in conjunction with other matter against which their education has taught them to revolt; justly subject him, in the opinion of the most orthodox Christians, to the epithet applied to him by the Editor. If they do, I cannot see how the same condemnation can be spared to numerous publications of extracts from the Old and the New Testaments, made and sent forth by several Christian authors, under various designations and for different purposes.

With respect to the latter mode of seeking evidence, however unjustified the Editor may be in

coming to such a conclusion, he is safe in ascribing the collection of these Precepts to Rammohun Roy ; who, although he was born a Brahmun, not only renounced idolatry at a very early period of his life, but published at that time a treatise in Arabic and Persian against that system ; and no sooner acquired a tolerable knowledge of English, than he made his desertion of idol worship known to the Christian world by his English publication—a renunciation that, I am sorry to say, brought severe difficulties upon him, by exciting the displeasure of his parents, and subjecting him to the dislike of his near, as well as distant relations, and to the hatred of nearly all his countrymen for several years. I therefore presume that among his declared enemies, who are aware of those facts, no one who has the least pretension to truth, would venture to apply the designation of heathen to him ; but I am sure, that the respect he entertains for the very name of Christianity, which the Editor of the Friend of India seems to profess, will restrain him from retorting on that Editor, although there may be differences of opinion between them, that might be thought sufficient to justify the use towards the Editor of a term no less offensive. The Editor perhaps may consider himself justified by numerous precedents amongst the several partizans of different Christian sects, in applying the name of heathen to one who takes the Precepts of Jesus as his principal guide in matters of religious and civil duties ; as Roman Catholics bestow the appellation

of heretics or infidels on all classes of Protestants, and Protestants do not spare the title of idolators to Roman Catholics; Trinitarians deny the name of Christian to Unitarians, while the latter retort by stigmatising the worshippers of the Son of man as Pagans, who adore a created and dependent Being. Very different conduct is inculcated in the precept of Jesus to John, when complaining of one who performed cures in the name of Jesus, yet refused to follow the apostles:—he gave a rebuke, saying, “He that is not against us is on our part:” *Mark*, ch. ix. ver. 40. The Compiler, having obviously in view at least one object in common with the Reviewer and Editor, that of procuring respect for the precepts of Christ, might have reasonably expected more charity from professed teachers of his doctrines.

The Compiler of the Precepts of Jesus, will, however, I doubt not, give preference to the guidance of those Precepts, which justify no retaliation even upon enemies, to the hasty suggestions of human passions, and the example of the Editor of the *Friend of India*.

2. The Editor of the *Friend of India* and the respected Reviewer, both not only disapprove absolutely the plan adopted by the Compiler in separating the moral doctrines of the books of the New Testament ascribed to the four Evangelists from the mysteries and historical matters therein contained, but even blame him as an injurer of the cause of truth; and for such disapprobation they assign several reasons: first, The Reviewer says, the supposition of the moral

sayings being sufficient for salvation, independent of the dogmas, is, (as he notes in page 27,) radically false; and that it is presumption of him (the Compiler) to think himself qualified to judge, independently of the Divine Teacher, what sort of instruction is advantageous for the happiness of mankind. If indeed the Reviewer understands by the word *moral*, what relates to conduct only with reference to man, it cannot apply to those precepts of Jesus, that teach the duty of man to God; which, however, the Reviewer will find included in the collection of the Precepts of Jesus by the Compiler; but a slight attention to the scope of the Introduction might have convinced the Reviewer, that the sense in which the word *moral* is there used, whether rightly or otherwise, is quite general, and applies equally to our conduct in religious as in civil matters. Without attaching this meaning to the term moral doctrines, the whole of the concluding sentence must appear absurd, where it is said, "This simple code is well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to God, to themselves, and to society." This assertion is corroborated and supported by a great number of passages in the treatise in question, which point out the appropriate mode of performing our duty to the Almighty Power. It is, however, too true to be denied, that the Compiler of those moral precepts separated them from some of the dogmas and other matters, chiefly under the supposition, that they alone were a suffi-



ent guide to secure peace and happiness to mankind at large—a position that is entirely founded on and supported by the express authorities of Jesus of Nazareth—a denial of which would imply a total disavowal of Christianity. Some of those authorities, as found amongst these precepts, here follow : *Matthew*, ch. xxii. beginning with ver. 37 : “ Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. 38. This is the first and great commandment. 39. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. 40. ON THESE TWO COMMANDMENTS HANG ALL THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS.” *Mark*, ch. xii. beginning with ver. 29 : “ And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. 30. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength. This is the first commandment. 31. And the second is LIKE, namely this : Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself : there is no other commandment greater than these. 32. And he said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth ; for there is one God, and there is none other but he. 33. And to love him with all the heart, with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all burnt-offerings and sacrifices. 34. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou

art not far from the kingdom of God." *Matthew*, ch. vii. ver. 12 : " Therefore all things whatever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to men ; FOR THIS IS THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS. Ch. v. Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or Prophets ; I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil." *Luke*, ch. x. beginning with ver. 25 : " And behold, a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? 26. He said unto him, What is written in the Law? How readest thou? 27. He answering said, Thou shalt [love the] Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind, and thy neighbour as thyself. 28. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right. THIS DO AND THOU SHALT LIVE." The Saviour meant of course by the words *Law* and *Prophets*, all the commandments ordained by divine authority, and the religion revealed to the prophets and observed by them ; as is evident from Jesus's declaring those commandments to afford perfect means of acquiring eternal life, and directing men to follow them accordingly. Had any other doctrine been requisite to teach men the road to peace and happiness, Jesus could not have pronounced to the lawyer, " This do and THOU SHALT LIVE." It was the characteristic of the office of Christ to teach men, that forms and ceremonies were useless tokens of respect for God, compared with the essential proof of obedience and love towards him evinced by the practice of beneficence towards their fellow-creatures.

The Compiler, finding these commandments given as including all the revealed law and the whole system of religion adopted by the prophets, and re-established and fulfilled by Jesus himself, as the means to acquire peace and happiness, was desirous of giving more full publicity in this country to them, and to the subsidiary moral doctrines that are introduced by the Saviour in detail. Placing also implicit confidence in the truth of his sacred commandments, to the observance of which we are directed by the same Teacher, (*John*, ch. xiv. ver. 16, "If ye love me, keep my commandments;" ver. 24, "He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings,") the Compiler never hesitated in declaring (page 1) "a belief in God, and a due regard to that law, 'Do unto others as you would wish to be done by,' render our existence agreeable to ourselves, and profitable to the rest of mankind." It may now be left to the public to judge, whether or not the charge of arrogance and presumption which the Reviewer has imputed to the Compiler, under the idea that he preferred his own judgment to that of the Saviour, be justly applicable to him.

3. The respected Reviewer argues in *page 26*, that there are two important points, a knowledge of which is not to be acquired by following the moral precepts of Christ, but which are essential to the attainment of true peace of mind; they being entirely founded (as he alleges) upon the dogmas and histories, viz. how to obtain, 1st, the forgiveness of sins

and the favour of God ; and 2dly, strength to overcome human passions, and to keep the commandments of God. These precepts separated from the mysterious dogmas and historical records, appear, on the contrary, to the Compiler to contain not only the essence of all that is necessary to instruct mankind in their civil duties, but also the best and only means of obtaining the forgiveness of our sins, the favour of God, and strength to overcome our passions, and to keep his commandments. I therefore extract from the same compilation a few passages of that greatest of all prophets, who was sent to call sinners to repentance ; a due attention to which will, I hope, satisfy the respected Reviewer on those two points. *Luke*, ch. xiii. ver. 3 : "Except you repent, you shall all likewise perish." Ch. xv. ver. 7 : "I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine persons who need no repentance. I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth." *Matthew*, ch. ix. "I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." Ch. xviii. "For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost." *Luke*, ch. vi. "I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." Which sayings are confirmatory of what is taught in *Ezekiel*, ch. xviii. ver. 30 : "Repent and turn yourselves from all your transgressions, so iniquity shall not be your ruin." See also the parable of the prodigal son, where the mercy of God is illus-

trated by the example of a father pardoning the transgressions of his repenting son. Numerous passages of the Old and the New Testaments to the same effect, which might fill a volume, distinctly promise us that the forgiveness of God and the favour of his Divine Majesty may be obtained by sincere repentance, as required of sinners by the Redeemer.

As to the second point, that is, How to be enabled to overcome our passions, and keep the commandments of God:—we are not left unprovided for in that respect, as our gracious Saviour has promised every strength and power as necessary consequences of earnest prayer and hearty desire. *Matthew*, ch. vii. and *Luke*, ch. vi. “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.” “If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him!” *Luke*, ch. xi. “I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you.” After a due attention to these and to numerous passages of the same effect, no one who believes in the divine message of Jesus of Nazareth, or even in the truth of his doctrine only, can be at all at a loss to find adequate means of attaining those two ends, justly considered to be most essential by the Reviewer.

4. The Reviewer imputes to the Compiler, error in exalting the value of the moral doctrines above that of the historical facts and dogmas contained in

the New Testament. This imputation, I humbly maintain, can be of no weight or force against the authority of Jesus himself, as quoted in the above texts ; which clearly shew, that there is no other means of attaining eternal life except the performance of our duties towards God in obeying his commandments. That the aim and object of all the commandments of God is to teach us our duty towards our fellow-creatures, may be gathered from a hundred passages of Scripture, of which perhaps the following may suffice. *Matthew*, ch. xxv. ver. 31: " When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory. And before him shall be gathered all nations : and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats. And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat : I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink : I was a stranger, and ye took me in : naked, and ye clothed me : I was sick, and ye visited me : I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee ? or thirsty, and gave thee drink ? When saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in ? or naked, and clothed thee ? Or when saw we thee sick, or in

prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me. Then shall he say unto them also on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to me. And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal." In this description of the day of judgment it is clearly announced, that the merciful Father of the universe accepts as [a] manifestation of love towards himself, every act of charity and beneficence performed towards his creatures. (See text already quoted, *Matthew*, ch. vii. ver. 12.) And apparently to counteract by anticipation the erroneous idea that such conduct might be dispensed with, and reliance placed on a mere dogmatical knowledge of God or of the Saviour, the following declaration seems to have been uttered. *Matthew*, ch. vii. ver. 21: "Not every one that saith unto me,

Lord ! Lord ! shall enter into the kingdom of heaven, but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say unto me in that day, Lord ! Lord ! have we not prophesied in thy name ; and in thy name have cast out devils ; and in thy name done many wonderful works ? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you ; depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth *these sayings* of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, who built his house upon a rock. And every one that heareth *these sayings* of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand." *Matthew*, ch. xii. " Whosoever shall do the will of my Father who is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother." *Luke*, ch. ix. " My mother and my brethren are those which hear the word of God and do it." Ch. xi. " Blessed is the womb (said a certain woman to Jesus) that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked : but he said, Yea, rather blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." *John*, ch. xv. " If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love ; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love." What, then, are THOSE SAYINGS, the obedience to which is so absolutely commanded as indispensable and all-sufficient to those who desire to inherit eternal life ? They are no other than the blessed and benign moral doctrines taught in the sermon on the mount, (contained in the 5th, 6th,



and 7th chapters of Matthew,) which include therefore every duty of man, and all that is necessary to salvation ; and they expressly exclude mere profession or belief, from those circumstances which God graciously admits as giving a title to eternal happiness. Neither in this, nor in any other part of the New Testament, can we find a commandment similarly enjoining a knowledge of any of the mysteries or historical relations contained in those books. It is besides plainly stated, that but a very small portion of the works of Jesus have been handed down to us by the Evangelists. John says at the conclusion of his gospel, ch. xxi. ver. 25, "There are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose the world itself could not contain the books that should be written." On the other hand, we cannot doubt that the whole spirit of his doctrines has been faithfully and fully recorded. The reason of this appears obvious :—miracles must have had a powerful effect on the minds of those who witnessed them, and who, without some such evidence, were disposed to question the authority of the teacher of those doctrines. *John*, ch. xv. ver. 23 : "The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me." Ver. 37, and 38 : "If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works." Had his doctrines of themselves made their due impression, the aid of miracles would not have been requisite, nor had recourse to. In this

country, the bare report of such miracles could have given no support to the weight of the doctrines ; for, as the Compiler has stated in his Introduction, miracles infinitely more wonderful are related of their gods and saints, on authorities that the Hindoos must deem superior to those of the Apostles.

We are taught by revelation, as well as education, to ascribe to the Deity the perfection of those attributes which are esteemed excellent amongst mankind. And according to those ideas it must surely appear more consistent with the justice of the Sovereign Ruler, that he should admit to mercy those of his subjects who, acknowledging his authority, have endeavoured to obey his laws ; or shewn contrition, when they have fallen short of their duty and love ; than that he should select for favour those whose claims rest on having acquired particular ideas of his nature, and of the origin of his Son, and of what afflictions that Son may have suffered in behalf of his people. If the Reviewer and Editor will continue to resist both authority and common sense, I must be content to take leave of them with the following words, (*Luke*, ch. xviii.): " And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rose from the dead."

5. The Reviewer observes, (in page 24,) with every mark of disapprobation, that the Compiler has intimated in the Introduction, that the dogmatical and historical matters are rather calculated to do in-

jury. The Compiler could not certainly overlook the daily occurrences and obvious facts which led him to remark, [in the Introduction,] that "historical and some other passages are liable to the doubts and disputes of Freethinkers and Anti-christians, especially miraculous relations, which are much less wonderful than the fabricated tales handed down to the natives of Asia:" and to prove what the Compiler stated, I humbly entreat any one to refer to the numerous volumes written by persons unattached to any of the established churches against the miracles, the history, and some of the dogmas of Christianity. It has been the different interpretations of the dogmas that have given rise to such keen disputes amongst the followers of Jesus. They have not only destroyed harmony and union between one sect of Christians and another, and continue to do so; but in past times have even caused continual wars and frequent bloodshed to rage amongst them, more dreadfully than between Christians and infidels. A slight reference to the histories of Christian countries will, I trust, afford to my readers entire conviction upon this head. Besides, the Compiler, residing in the same spot where European missionary gentlemen and others for a period of upwards of twenty years have been, with a view to promote Christianity, distributing in vain amongst the natives numberless copies of the complete Bible, written in different languages, could not be altogether ignorant of the causes of their disappointment. He, however, never

doubted their zeal for the promulgation of Christianity, nor the accuracy of their statement with regard to immense sums of money being annually expended in preparing vast numbers of copies of the Scriptures ; but he has seen with regret, that they have completely counteracted their own benevolent efforts, by introducing all the dogmas and mysteries taught in Christian Churches to people by no means prepared to receive them ; and that they have been so incautious and inconsiderate in their attempts to enlighten the natives of India, as to address their instructions to them in the same way as if they were reasoning with persons brought up in a Christian country, with those dogmatical notions imbibed from their infancy. The consequence has been, that the natives in general, instead of benefiting by the perusal of the Bible, copies of which they always receive gratuitously, exchange them very often for blank paper ; and generally use several of the dogmatical terms in their native language as a mark of slight in an irreverent manner ; the mention of which is repugnant to my feelings. Sabat, an eminently learned but grossly unprincipled Arab, whom our divines supposed that they had converted to Christianity, and whom they of course instructed in all the dogmas and doctrines, wrote a few years ago a treatise in Arabic against those very dogmas, and printed himself and published several hundred copies of this work. And another Moosulman, of the name of Ena'et Ahmud, a man of respectable family, who is

still alive, speedily returned to Mohummodanism from Christianity, pleading that he had not been able to reconcile to his understanding certain dogmas which were imparted to him. It has been owing to their beginning with the introduction of mysterious dogmas, and of relations that at first sight appear incredible, that notwithstanding every exertion on the part of our divines, I am not aware that we can find a single respectable Moosulman or Hindoo, who were not in want of the common comforts of life, once glorified with the truth of Christianity, constantly adhering to it. Of the few hundred natives who have been nominally converted to Christianity, and who have been generally of the most ignorant class, there is ground to suspect that the greater number have been allured to change their faith by other attractions than by a conviction of the truth and reasonableness of those dogmas; as we find nearly all of them are employed or fed by their spiritual teachers, and in case of neglect are apt to manifest a rebellious spirit;—a circumstance which is well known to the Compiler from several local facts, as well as from the following occurrence. About three years ago, the Compiler, on his visit to an English gentleman, who is still residing in the vicinity of Calcutta, saw a great number of Christian converts with a petition, which they intended to present to the highest ecclesiastical authority, stating, that their teachers, through false promises of advancement, had induced them to give up their

ancient religion. The Compiler felt indignant at their presumption, and suggested to the gentleman, as a friend, the propriety of not countenancing a set of men who, from their own declaration, seemed so unprincipled. The Missionaries themselves are as well aware as the Compiler, that those very dogmas are the points which the people always select as the most proper for attack, both in their oral and written controversies with Christian teachers ; all of which, if required, the Compiler is prepared to prove by the most unquestionable testimony.

Under these circumstances, the Compiler published such sayings of Christ, as he thought intelligible to all, conveying conviction with them, and best calculated to lead mankind to universal love and harmony ; not dwelling upon those matters, an observance of which is not absolutely ordained, and the interpretations of which, instead of introducing peace and happiness, have generally given rise to disputes and controversies. The Compiler has had no local influence nor power to promote any one's interest, nor has he situations to give away, nor yet has he friends and colleagues to recommend others to their patronage. Humble as he is, he has therefore adopted those measures which he thought most judicious, to spread the truth in an acceptable manner ; but I am sorry to observe, that he has unfortunately and unexpectedly met with opposition from those whom he considered the last persons likely to oppose him on this subject. From what has already been

advanced, the Reviewer may perceive the reason why the passages extracted by the Compiler from the Gospel of St. John should be comparatively few. It is from this source that the most difficult to be comprehended of the dogmas of the Christian religion have been principally drawn ; and on the foundation of passages of that writer, the interpretation of which is still a matter of keen discussion amongst the most learned and most pious scholars in Christendom, is erected the mysterious doctrine of three Gods in one Godhead, the origin of Mohummudanism, and the stumbling-block to the conversion of the more enlightened amongst the Hindoos.

To impress more strongly on the minds of those for whom this compilation was intended, the doctrines taught by Jesus, the Compiler thought the varied repetition of them by different but concurring reporters highly advantageous, as showing clearly that those doctrines were neither misrepresented nor misconceived by any of those Evangelists.

6. Nor is the conduct of the Compiler in selecting certain passages of the Scriptures for certain purposes singular ; for we see very often extracts from the Bible, published by the learned men of every sect of Christians, with a view to the maintenance of particular doctrines. Christian Churches have selected passages from the Bible, which they conceive particularly excellent, and well adapted for the constant perusal and study of the people of their respective churches ; and besides, it is the continual practice

of every Christian teacher to choose from the whole Scriptures such texts as he deems most important, for the purposes of illustrating them, and impressing them on the minds of his hearers. Nor will those teachers, if questioned as to their object in such selection, hesitate to assign as their motive the very reason adopted by the Compiler as his—the superior importance of the parts so selected. Whether or not he has erred in his judgment on that point, must be determined by those who will candidly peruse and consider the arguments already advanced on the subject, always bearing in mind the lesson practically taught by the Saviour himself, of adapting his instructions to the susceptibility and capacity of his hearers. *John* xvi. 12: “I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.”

Hindustan is a country, of which nearly 3-5ths of the inhabitants are Hindoos, and 2-5ths Moosulmans. Although the professors of neither of these religions are possessed of such accomplishments as are enjoyed by Europeans in general, yet the latter portion are well known to be firmly devoted to a belief in one God, which has been instilled into their minds from their infancy. The former (I mean the Hindoos) are, with a few exceptions, immersed in gross idolatry, and in belief of the most extravagant description respecting futurity, antiquity, and the miracles of their deities and saints, as handed down to them and recorded in their ancient books. Weighing these circumstances, and anxious, from his long



experience of religious controversy with natives, to avoid further disputation with them, the Compiler selected those precepts of Jesus, the obedience to which he believed most peculiarly required of a Christian, and such as could by no means tend, in doctrine, to excite the religious horror of Mohummedans, or the scoffs of Hindoos. What benefit or peace of mind can we bestow upon a Moosulman, who is an entire stranger to the Christian world, by communicating to him without preparatory instruction all the peculiar dogmas of Christianity ; such as those contained in *ver. 1st, chap. 1st, of St. John*, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God"? Would they not find themselves at a loss to reconcile this dogma to their unprepared understandings, viz. A is B, and A is also with B? Although the interpretations given us of such texts by truly learned and candid divines be ever so satisfactory, yet to those that are strangers to these explanations, they cannot be intelligible ; nor can it be expected from the order of things that each can happily find at hand an able interpreter, to whom he can have recourse for an explanation, whenever he may be involved in difficulties or doubts. But as a great number of Missionary gentlemen may perhaps view the matter in a different light, and join the Editor of the Friend of India, in accusing the Compiler as an injurer of the cause of truth, I doubt not that with a view to avoid every possibility of such imputation, and to prevent

others from attributing their ill success to his interference with their duties, he would gladly abstain from publishing again on the same subject, if he could see in past experience any thing to justify hopes of their success. From what I have already stated, I hope no one will infer that I feel ill-disposed towards the Missionary establishments in this country. This is far from being the case. I pray for their augmentation, and that their members may remain in the happy enjoyment of life in a climate so generally inimical to European constitutions ; for in proportion to the increase of their number, sobriety, moderation, temperance, and good behaviour, have been diffused among their neighbours as the necessary consequences of their company, conversation, and good example.

[7.] The Reviewer charges the Compiler with inconsistency, (p. 27,) because he has termed the precepts collected by him, a code of religion and morality, while, as the Reviewer supposes, they form only a code of morality and not of religion. It is already explained in paragraph 2d, that the Compiler has introduced those precepts of Jesus under the denomination of the moral sayings of the New Testament, taking the word moral in its wide sense, as including our conduct to God, to each other, and to ourselves ; and to avoid the least possibility of misunderstanding the term, he has carefully particularized the sense in which he accepted that word by the latter sentence, “ This simple code of Religion and Mora-

lity, (meaning by the former, those precepts which treat of our duty to God, and by the latter, such as relate to our duties to mankind and to ourselves,) is so admirably calculated to elevate men's ideas to high and liberal notions of one God, &c." "and is also so well fitted to regulate the conduct of the human race in the discharge of their various duties to God, to themselves, and to society, &c." In conformity to the design thus expressed, he has collected all the sayings that have a tendency to those ends. The Compiler, however, observes with regret, that neither this language nor this fact, has afforded to the Reviewer satisfactory evidence of his intention, nor sufficed to save him from the unexpected imputation of inconsistency.

The Reviewer again (page 29) charges the Compiler with inconsistency, in having introduced some doctrinal passages into his compilation. In reply to which, I again entreat the attention of the respected Reviewer to that passage in the Introduction, in which the Compiler states the motives that have led him to exclude certain parts of the gospels from his publication. He there states, that it is on account of these passages being such as were the ordinary foundation of the arguments of the opponents of Christianity, or the sources of the interminable controversies that have led to heart-burnings and even bloodshed amongst Christians, that they were not included in his selection; and they were omitted the more readily, as he considered them not essential to

religion. But such dogmas or doctrinal and other passages as are not exposed to those objections, and are not unfamiliar to the minds of those for whose benefit the compilation was intended, are generally included, in conformity with the avowed plan of the work—particularly such as seem calculated to direct our love and obedience to the beneficent Author of the universe, and to him whom he graciously sent to deliver those Precepts of Religion and Morality, whose tendency is to promote universal peace and harmony.

8. In objecting to the assertion made by the Compiler in the Introduction as to a belief in the existence of God prevailing generally, the respected Reviewer advances three arguments:—1st, That millions of people believe in a plurality of Gods. 2dly, That the majority of those enlightened persons who deny the truth of the Jewish and Christian Revelation are Atheists. 3rdly, That the very system of the Vedant, which denies to God his moral attributes, is a refined and disguised Atheism. I certainly admit that a great number of men, and even men of profound learning and extensive abilities, are, owing to their early education, literally sunk in Polytheism, an absurd and irrational system of religion. But the admission of a plurality of Gods does not amount to the denial of Godhead. A man, for instance, cannot be accused of having no notion of mankind, because he is proved to believe in the existence of a plurality of individuals. The Reviewer ought, there-

fore, to have confined himself to the remark, the truth of which will be readily admitted, that there are millions of people ignorant of the Unity of God ; the only doctrine consistent with reason and revelation. The astonishing eagerness of the learned amongst those whose practice and language are polytheistical, to prefer their claim to be considered as Monotheists, is a strong evidence of the consistency of the system of Monotheism with reason. Debased and despicable as is the belief of the Hindoos in three hundred and thirty millions of gods, they pretend to reconcile this persuasion with the doctrine of the Unity of God ; alleging that the three hundred and thirty millions of gods, whom they enumerate, are subordinate agents, assuming various offices in preserving the harmony of the universe under one Godhead, as innumerable rays issue from one sun. I am at a loss to trace the origin of his second argument, imputing Atheism to the majority of those who deny the divinity of the Jewish and Christian Revelation. For, notwithstanding my acquaintance with several Europeans and Asiatics who doubt the possibility of Revelation, I have never met with one, to the best of my recollection, maintaining Atheism, however widely they might differ from the Reviewer and the Compiler in a great many points of belief relating to the Deity. The Reviewer perhaps may have met with some unhappy Freethinkers, who have professed doubts respecting the existence of a supreme superintending power—a circumstance which has proba-

bly induced him to form this opinion ; but such rare instances can have no force to set aside the credit of what the Compiler affirms, that a belief in God *prevails generally*. Neither can I conscientiously coincide with the respected Reviewer in his imputing Atheism to the Vedant system, under the supposition of its denying moral attributes to God ; nor can I help lamenting that religious prejudice should influence the Reviewer so much, as to make him apply the term of Atheist towards a sect or to individuals who look up to the God of nature through his wonderful works alone ; for the Vedant, in common with the Jewish and Christian Scriptures, from the impossibility of forming more exalted conceptions, constantly ascribes to God the perfection of those moral attributes which are considered among the human species excellent and sublime. To prove this I quote one passage from each of the four Oopunishuds of the Vedant, which have already been translated into English. Moonduk, ch. 1, sect. 1 : “ By him who knows all things collectively and distinctly, whose knowledge and will are the only means of his actions, Bruhma, name, and form, and all that vegetates, are produced.” Kuthu, ch. 5 : “ God is eternal, among all the perishable universe ; and is the source of sensation among all animate existences ; and he alone assigns to so many objects their respective purposes.” Kenopunishud : “ In a battle between the celestial gods and the demons, God enabled the former to defeat the latter.” And Ishopunishud : “ He over-

spreads all creatures, is merely spirit without the form either of a minute body or of an extended one, which is liable to impression or organization. He is pure, perfect, omniscient, the Ruler of the intellect, omnipresent, and the self-existent. He has from eternity been assigning to all creatures their respective purposes." For further evidence, if required, I beg to refer the Reviewer to the rest of the original Vedant works that may be found in the College Library and in the Missionary stores of books. It is, however, very true, that the Vedant declares very often its total ignorance of the real nature and attributes of God. Kenopunishud, ver. 3: "Hence no vision can approach him, no language can describe him, no intellectual power can compass or determine him; we know nothing how the Supreme Being should be explained," &c. It also represents God sometimes in a manner familiar to the understanding of the vulgar. Moonduk, ch. 7, sect. 1: "Heaven is his head, and the sun and the moon are his eyes; space is his ears," &c. But such declarations are not peculiar to the Vedant doctrines, as these are found frequently in the sacred Scriptures. *Job xxxvi. 26*: "Behold God is great, and we know him not;" "touching the Almighty we cannot find him out; his greatness is unsearchable." The Scriptures also represent God in the same familiar and figurative manner as is found in the Vedant. God is affirmed to have made man in his own image, after his own likeness. The angels always behold God's face in

heaven. In the Old Testament, as well as in the New, God is represented as repenting of his works, as being moved with anger, vexation, grief, joy, love, and hate : as moving from place to place ; having arms, with hands and fingers ; a head, with face, mouth, tongue, eyes, nose, ears, a heart, bowels, back, thighs, legs ; as seeing, being seen, speaking and hearing, slumbering, waking, &c. No one capable of sound reasoning can for a moment imagine that these or any other descriptions of God are intended to convey literal notions of the unsearchable, incomprehensible Being.

May God render religion destructive of differences and dislike between man and man, and conducive to the peace and union of mankind. Amen.



# **Second Appeal**

TO

**THE CHRISTIAN PUBLIC,**

IN DEFENCE OF THE

***“PRECEPTS OF JESUS.”***

---

BY

**RAMMOHUN ROY.**

---

**CALCUTTA:**

**PRINTED AT THE BAPTIST MISSION PRESS, CIRCULAR ROAD.**

**1821.**

---

**LONDON, REPRINTED:**

**1823.**



## ADVERTISEMENT.

---

THE contents of the following Treatise are included under these two propositions:—1st, That the Precepts of Jesus, which teach that love to God is manifested in beneficence towards our fellow-creatures, are a sufficient Guide to Peace and Happiness; and 2ndly, That that omnipresent God, who is the only proper object of religious veneration, is one and undivided in person.

Though these doctrines, as I conceive them to be alike founded on reason and revelation, appear to me to be almost as obvious truths as any abstract axiom, yet they are opposed in fact by a very large body of writers and teachers. I must therefore leave them to be decided upon by those, who will be pleased to bestow their candid and liberal attention on the arguments I have used in the succeeding pages;—and on their impartial judgment I confidently rely.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

	Page
ALTERATION of Style in the Review .....	145
Two points which the Editor wishes to establish, to wit, the excellency of the Dogmas and the insufficiency of the Precepts .....	145, 146
The Compiler acknowledges the first .....	146
Rejects the second .....	147
Passages shewing the sufficiency of the Precepts—God one, and the object of supreme love .....	148
The authority of Paul quoted, inapplicable .....	150
Justifying a selection as the substitute for the whole .....	ib.
The Precepts of Jesus practicable .....	151
The contradiction between the indispensableness of the Doc- trines and the sufficiency of the Precepts .....	153
Repentance the only means of forgiveness .....	154

## CHAPTER II.

Positions of the Reviewer .....	155
Jesus receives all power from God .....	156
Power given to Jesus as the Son of God .....	157
The unity between God and Jesus, and between him and his disciples .....	162
God dwelleth in Jesus and he in God .....	163
Jesus considered distinct from God .....	165
He that hath seen the Son hath seen the Father .....	ib.
Definition of the unity between God and Jesus .....	167
Jesus's disavowal of his own Deity .....	ib.
The Jews charged Jesus only with calling himself the Son of God .....	168

	Page
The term "God" frequently applied to existences inferior to God .....	168
The term "for ever" often applied to created beings .....	170
John i. 1, explained .....	171
Hindoos believe in one Godhead, consisting of numerous persons under it .....	172
Jesus performs wonderful works, which do not amount to equality with those of God .....	173

## CHAPTER III.

The first position of the Editor, on the ubiquity of Jesus. . . .	175
John iii. 13, explained .....	<i>ib.</i>
— viii. 58, xi. 8 .....	<i>ib.</i>
— xi. 38; Matt. xxvi. 2; John xiii. 6, xvi. 32; Matt. ii. 18, 15; John vi. 62 .....	176
— xvi. 7, 5, 28, xiii. 36, 1 .....	177
Matt. xviii. 20, explained .....	179
Luke xvi. 29 .....	<i>ib.</i>
The second position of the Editor, on the incomprehensibility of the nature of Jesus .....	180
Matt. xi. 27, explained .....	<i>ib.</i>
John xiv. 16, 17 .....	181
Mark xiii. 32, explained .....	<i>ib.</i>
Matt. xi. 28, [Prov. xxix. 17,] explained .....	182
The third position of the Editor, on Jesus forgiving sins in an independent manner .....	<i>ib.</i>
Mark ii. 5, 9, explained .....	<i>ib.</i>
Acts v. 31, 32, xiii. 38 .....	183
Luke xxiii. 34, xi. 4; Matt. vi. 14 .....	184
The fourth position of the Editor, respecting the almighty power of Jesus .....	<i>ib.</i>
John v. 21—23, explained .....	<i>ib.</i>
— 19—36 .....	185
Deut. xviii. 15, 18; Acts iii. 22, vii. 37, considered ....	187
Matt. xx. 23, xii. 28, xxvi. 39, considered .....	188

	Page
Matt. xxvi. 42 ; Luke xxii. 32 ; John xii. 27, separately explained .....	188
Matt. x. 40 ; John v. 23, separately explained .....	189
Matt. v. 48 .....	ib.
The fifth position of the Editor, respecting the judgment of the world by Jesus .....	ib.
Matt. iii. 9 ; Luke i. 37 .....	190
From this the Editor infers his omniscience .....	ib.
Mark xiii. 32, considered .....	ib.
John v. 26, 27, 30, considered .....	191
The sixth position of the Editor, respecting the worship accepted by Jesus .....	ib.
Daniel ii. 46 ; Matt. xviii. 26, considered .....	192
John iv. 24 ; Matt. iv. 10, xix. 17 .....	ib.
— ix. 31, 33, 38 ; Mark v. 7 .....	193
Luke xvii. 15, 16 ; Matt. xiv. 33, xv. 25 ; Mark viii. 29 ; Luke xxiv. 19 .....	194
John vi. 69, xx. 31 ; Matt. viii. 2 .....	195
The worship paid to Jesus inferior to divine .....	191—195
Jesus himself worshipped the Father ; Matt. vi. 9, xxvi. 53 ; John xvi. 26 ; Luke xxii. 41, 42 ; Mark xiv. 35, 36 ; Luke vi. 12, x. 21 ; John xi. 41 ; Matt. xxvii. 46 ; John iv. 22 .....	196
The seventh position of the Editor, respecting the form of Baptism, Matt. xxviii. 19 ; Exod. xiv. 31 .....	197
Mohammud joins his own name with that of God in his form of belief .....	198
Matt. xxviii. 18, considered .....	ib.
Synonymous expressions employed by Mohummud and Jesus	199
Mussulmans notwithstanding remain strict Monotheists....	200

#### CHAPTER IV.

Texts adduced in support of the atonement, explained .....	201
Luke iv. 43, ii. 47—49 ; John xvii. 8 .....	202
The sufferings of Jesus and of other Prophets unaccountable except as prophesied .....	203

	Page
John ix. 8; Mark xii. 1-9, considered.....	204
— xv. 21, 22.....	205
Whether Jesus suffered as God or as Man for mankind ....	ib.
The first inconsistent with the nature of God .....	ib.
The last inconsistent with justice.....	206
Jesus averse to the death of the cross .....	ib.
Matthew xxvi. 37, 39, 42, 43; Mark xiv. 36, considered ..	ib.
Luke xxii. 42, 44; John xii. 27; xi. 17, 18; Matt. xxvi. 53, 54, considered.....	207
The application of the term Saviour to Jesus a supposed proof of the atonement.....	208
Obadiah 21; Nehemiah ix. 27; 2 Kings xix. 5, considered	ib.
Jesus is a Saviour from imputating the word of God .....	209
John xv. 3, v. 24, vi. 68, considered .....	ib.
God declares Christ a Prophet equal to Moses .....	ib.
Matthew v. 7 .....	ib.
— xxiii. 2, 8 .....	210
Jesus was a perfect teacher of the divine will .....	ib.
Matthew v. 21, 22 .....	ib.
— v. 27, 28, 31, 32, 38, 39, 43-45, considered ....	211
The term "Lamb of God" explained .....	212
Nature of Christ .....	213
God shews mercy for righteousness' sake .....	ib.
Genesis xxx. 27; Jeremiah xlvii. 18; Genesis xlviii. 16; Exodus xxiii. 20, 21.....	214
The Author offers no opinion on this doctrine .....	ib.

## CHAPTER V.

Disputes ascribed to the different interpretations of the Dogmas .....	215
Illiberality in supposing that the primitive Christians shed each other's blood from worldly motives .....	216
Mosheim's Authority, Vol. I. pp. 419, 420 .....	ib.
Illiberal remarks may be equally applied to the Apostles and Martyrs .....	217



	Page
The cause of the final success of Alexandrians (afterwards called the Orthodox) over Arians .....	217
Violent contentions between Roman Catholics and Protestants .....	218
Matthew x. 34, explained by its contents .....	219
Difference between the peculiar Doctrines of the Gospel and the tenet of the existence of God .....	221
The miracles quoted by the Reviewer to shew their importance, considered .....	222
Matthew xi. 2-4 .....	ib.
John x. 37, 38, xiv. 11; Matthew xiii. 39; John xx. 29, considered .....	223
The arguments adduced by the Reviewer in support of Christian miracles are equally applicable to Hindoo miracles ..	224
And also to the miraculous narrations of Mussulmans .....	225
Superior excellence of the Precepts of Jesus .....	226

## CHAPTER VI.

Only one circumstance adduced in support of the Deity of the Spirit as a distinct person .....	227
The association of the name of the Spirit with that of the Father and Son inadequate to prove this doctrine .....	228
Prophets associated with God. 2 Chron. xx. 20; Jeremiah xxx. 9; Luke iii. 16 .....	ib.
The Holy Spirit explained to be the guiding influence of God, John xiv. 6, xvi. 13 .....	229
Anger, mercy, truth, &c. personified as well as the Holy Spirit. 2 Kings xxiv. 20; Psalm xc. 7, xxi. 7, vi. 4; Luke xii. 12; Acts i. 8; John xiv. 26; Psalm lvi. 3, lxxv. 10, c. 5, xxxiii. 22, xxxvi. 5, cviii. 4; [Ezek.] vii. 3; 2 Chron. xxiv. 18 .....	230
The bad consequences of supposing the Spirit to be a person of God, Matt. i. 11, 20; Luke i. 35 .....	231
This opinion also inconsistent with the use of the term in Matt. iii. 11; Luke iii. 16; Acts x. 38; Matt. xii. 28, 31; Luke iv. 1, iii. 22 .....	232

The Jews accuse Jesus of employing diabolical influence . . .	234
Matt. xii. 24, 37, with context; and Mark iii. 29, 30, explained . . . . .	<i>ib.</i>
The Spirit of God was bestowed before the coming of Jesus, Luke i. 15, 41, 67, ii. 25, 26; Mark xii. 36; Matt. xxii. 43; Luke iv. 1 . . . . .	237, 238
Acts v. 3, 4; John xv. 26, explained . . . . .	239
The plural number of nouns and pronouns in Hebrew, &c. is often used for a singular agent or object. Gen. i. 26; Deut. iv. 4; Exod. xxi. 4, 6; Isaiah vi. 8 . . . . .	240—242
The same rule observed in Arabic; of which an example from the Qoran . . . . .	242
The thrice repeated term "holy" in Isaiah vi. 3, noticed . .	243
The verse which has been introduced as John v. 7, noticed . .	<i>ib.</i>
The Trinity not taught by the Apostles . . . . .	244
This proved by Acts ii. 22, 32, 36, iii. 22, 23, iv. 12, 26, 27, v. 31, 7, [vii. 56,] viii. 37, 38, x. 38, 42, xiii. 38, xvii. 3 . . . . .	245, 246
Extracts from Mosheim, Vol. I. pp. 100, 411, 412, 414, shewing that so late as the year 314 the Deity of the Son was not considered a fundamental article of faith . . . . .	247, 249
Reason why Trinitarians prevailed at the Council of Nice . .	250
Another extract from Mosheim, p. 25. Acts xxviii. 6, and xiv. 11, quoted . . . . .	250, 251
Other extracts from Mosheim, shewing that Polytheism was familiar to the Christian converts of the first ages, (pp. 65, 66) . . . . .	251
The prevalence of the Trinity attributable only to the prejudices of education . . . . .	252
The alleged two-fold consciousness of Jesus Christ considered . . . . .	<i>ib.</i>
Moses might also be said to have a two-fold consciousness . .	253
Mode of reconciling apparent contradictions in Scripture . .	254
Difficulties arising from neglecting this mode . . . . .	<i>ib.</i>
The argument drawn from the analogy of the soul, will, and perception, to the Trinity, considered . . . . .	255

	Page
The argument drawn from the analogy of the sun, light, and heat, to the Trinity, considered .....	256
On the argument which represents Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, as qualities of one Deity .....	257
The union between Father and Son compared to that between the human soul and body.....	<i>ib.</i>
Argument drawn from the alleged resemblance between the term "Son of Man" and "Son of God" .....	258
On the argument which represents God as a compound substance .....	<i>ib.</i>
John xvii. 3; 1 Cor. xv. 24, viii. 6; Ephes. iv. 5, 6, quoted	259
Alleged necessity of the Deity of Jesus to his mediatorial character .....	<i>ib.</i>
This opposed to common sense .....	260
Opposed also to scripture; Numbers xi. 1, 2, xiv. 19, 20, xxi. 7, xxxii. 30; Gen. xviii. 32; Jeremiah xxvii. 18; Deuteronomy v. 5 .....	260, 261
The arguments of Hindoos for Polytheism more powerful than those of Christians for the Trinity .....	262

## APPENDIX.

### No. I.

#### *On the Quotations from the Old Testament contained in the New.*

Matt. ii. 15 .....	263
— iv. 4 .....	264
— 7 .....	<i>ib.</i>
— ix. 13 .....	265
— xix. 19, xxii. 39 .....	<i>ib.</i>
— xxi. 42 .....	<i>ib.</i>
— xxii. 44 .....	<i>ib.</i>
John x. 35 .....	266

	Page
Matt. iv. 10.	265
—— xiii. 14.	ib.
—— xiv. 5.	267
—— 18, 19	ib.
—— xxii. 32	ib.
—— 37	ib.
—— xxvi. 31.	ib.
John vi. 45	268
—— xlii. 18.	ib.
—— xv. 25.	269
Matt. xxi. 16.	ib.
—— 13.	ib.
—— xv. 7-9	ib.
—— xi. 10.	270
Luke iv. 8.	ib.
—— 18, 19.	ib.
These quotations. prove the subordinate nature of Jesus to God.	271

## No. II.

### *On the References made to the Old Testament in Support of the Deity of Jesus*

John i. 14, compared with Isaiah ix. 6, explained	272
Hebrews i. 8, 9, compared with Psalm xlv. 6, 7, considered	284
Luke i. 16, 17, compared with Isaiah xl. 3, and Malachi iii. 1.	285
John xii. 41, compared with Isaiah vi. 5	286
1 Cor. i. 30, compared with Jeremiah xxiii. 6	ib.
The original of Jeremiah xxiii. 6, xxiii. 16; Gen. xxv. 26;	
2 Sam. ii. 16; Gen. xvi. 14, compared	287, 288
Rom. xiv. 10, 12, compared with Isaiah xlv. 29	288
2 Peter iii. 18, compared with Isaiah xliii. 3, on the term	
Saviour	289
John x. 16, compared with Psalm xxiii. 1, on the term	
Shepherd	290

	Page
1 Cor. x. 9, compared with Psalm lxxviii. 56, on tempting Christ.....	291
John iii. 29, compared with Psalm [Isaiah] liv. 5, on the term husband .....	292
Revelation xxii. 13, compared with Isaiah xlv. 6, on the phrase "Alpha and Omega" .....	293
Rev. xxii. 12, compared with Isaiah xl. 10, on the phrase "My reward is with me" .....	296
Ephes. iv. 8, compared with Psalm lxviii. 18, on the phrase "Thou hast ascended on high" .....	<i>ib.</i>
John xix. 37, compared with Zechariah xii. 10, on the phrase "whom they pierced" .....	297
1 Peter ii. 6—8, compared with Isaiah xxviii. 16, and viii. 13, 14, on the phrase "stone of stumbling," &c. ..	299, 300
The Hebrew and other Asiatic languages full of metaphor, John x. 34—36.....	301
The Deity of Moses and of David cannot be proved from Deut. xxx. 15; 1 Chron. xxix. 20 .....	302
Personal interest does not influence the author; nor desire of fame .....	303
Nor the hope of success .....	304
But reverence for the author of Christianity, and a wish to raise it above all polytheistical systems .....	<i>ib.</i>
The author's views derived from the Scriptures .....	<i>ib.</i>
The Old Testament should be studied before the New ....	305
Locke's testimony respecting the fundamental articles of Christianity .....	<i>ib.</i>
Extract from Sir Isaac Newton, pointing out the different natures of God and Christ .....	306
Argument in favour of the Trinity, from its analogy to the triangle, considered .....	<i>ib.</i>
Several arguments occurring in the beginning of Serle's <i>Horæ Solitariae</i> , considered .....	308
Conclusion .....	312

## POSTSCRIPT.

	Page
Dr. Prideaux's assertion respecting the testimony of Jonathan's Targum on Isaiah ix. 6, 7, examined .....	313
The term "Messiah" applied to various kings.....	314
Quotations from several ancient Jewish commentators.....	<i>ib.</i>
On the difference of meaning between "to be called" and "to be".....	315
Passages illustrating the epithets employed in Isaiah ix. 6 ..	316
The terms "Son" and "only-begotten" incompatible with the nature of the First Cause .....	<i>ib.</i>
The assertion respecting two sets of terms and phrases being applied to Jesus, examined .....	317
No Hindoo can conscientiously prefer the doctrine of the Trinity to Hindooism .....	<i>ib.</i>
True Christianity is free from Polytheism.....	318



## A SECOND APPEAL.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### *General Defence of the Precepts in Question.*

THE observations contained in No. I. of the Quarterly Series of "The Friend of India," on the Introduction to "The Precepts of Jesus," as well as on their defence, termed "An Appeal to the Christian Public," are happily expressed in so mild and Christian-like a style, that they have not only afforded me ample consolation for the disappointment and vexation I felt from the personality conveyed in the preceding Magazines, (Nos. 20 and 23,) but have also encouraged me to pursue my researches after the fundamental principles of Christianity in a manner agreeable to my feelings, and with such respect as I should always wish to manifest for the situation and character of so worthy a person as the Editor of the Friend of India.

The Reverend Editor labours in his Review to establish two points—the truth and excellency of the miraculous relations and of the dogmas found in the Scriptural writings—and 2ndly, the insufficiency of

the compiled Precepts of Jesus alone to lead to salvation, unless accompanied with the important doctrines of the Godhead of Jesus and his atonement.

As the Compiler neither in his Introduction to the Precepts of Jesus, nor in his defence of those Precepts, has expressed the least doubt as to the truth of any part of the Gospels, the arguments adduced by the learned Editor to demonstrate the truth and excellence of the authority on which they rest, are, I am inclined to think, quite superfluous, and foreign to the matter in question.

The only reasons assigned by the Compiler, ([in the] Introduction,) for separating the Precepts from the abstruse doctrines and miraculous relations of the New Testament are, that the former "are liable to the doubts and disputes of Freethinkers and Antichristians, and the latter are capable at best of carrying little weight with the natives of this part of the globe, the fabricated tales handed down to them being of a more wonderful nature."

These sentiments respecting the doctrines and miracles, founded as they are upon undeniable facts, do not, I presume, convey any disavowal or doubt of their truth. Besides, in applying the term "fabricated" to the tales received by the credulous Hindoos, the Compiler clearly evinced the contemptible light in which he viewed those legends; and in stating that the miracles of the Scriptures were subject to the doubts of "Freethinkers and Antichristians," it



can never fairly be supposed that he meant himself, or any other person labouring in the promulgation of Christianity, to be included in that class.

As to the second point urged by the Reverend Editor, namely, that the compiled Precepts were not sufficient to lead to salvation, I deeply regret that the Editor should appear to have overlooked the authority of the gracious author of this religion in the several passages cited by the Compiler in his Appeal, to prove beyond doubt the sufficiency of the Precepts in question to procure eternal life; as it is almost impossible that so numerous quotations, spreading over a great part of the Appeal, could have escaped his notice. The Reverend Editor, while endeavouring to prove, that the compiled Precepts would fall short of guiding to peace and happiness, only illustrates by sacred authority the truth and excellency of the miracles and the doctrines of Christianity. But such illustration can have no tendency to demonstrate the position he endeavours to maintain; I am therefore under the necessity of repeating a few passages already quoted, with some others, shewing that the compiled Precepts are sufficient to conduct the human race to happiness; and I humbly entreat to know, if I be persuaded to believe in the divine origin of those passages, and in the entire veracity of their author, how I am to reconcile their authority with the position maintained by the learned Editor, as to the insufficiency of the Precepts of Jesus to guide to peace and happiness.—

*Matthew*, ch. xxii. beginning with ver. 37 : " Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind ; this is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets." *Mark*, ch. xii. beginning with ver. 29 : " And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord. Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength : this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is no other commandment greater than these." *Matthew*, ch. vii. ver. 12 : " Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to them ; for this is the Law and the Prophets." *Luke*, ch. x. from ver. 25 : " And behold, a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life ? He said unto him, What is written in the Law ? How readest thou ? He answering said : Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind ; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right. *This do, and thou shalt live.*" *Matthew*, ch. vii. ver. 21 : " Not every one that saith unto me, Lord ! Lord ! shall enter into the

kingdom of heaven ; but he that doeth the will of my Father who is in heaven. Many will say unto me in that day, Lord ! Lord ! have we not prophesied in thy name ; and in thy name have cast out devils ; and in thy name done many wonderful works ? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you ; depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, who built his house upon a rock ; and every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, who built his house upon the sand." *Luke*, ch. xi. ver. 27 : " Blessed is the womb (said a certain woman to Jesus), that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked : but he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." *John*, ch. xv. ver. 12 : " This is my commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you." Ver. 17, " These things I command you, that ye love one another." Ch. xiii. ver. 34 : " A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another ; as I have love you, that ye also love one another : " 35, " By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another." Observing those two commandments, (*Matt.* ch. xxii. ver. 37, 38, and 39,) selected by the Saviour as a substitute for all the Law and the Prophets, and sufficient means to produce peace and happiness to mankind, the Compiler never scrupled to follow the example

set forth by Jesus himself in compiling such precepts as include those two commandments, and their subsidiary moral doctrines, as a true substitute of the Gospel, without intending to depreciate the rest of the word of God. I regret that the Reverend Editor should have disapproved of this compilation on the ground that "it is of importance that every compilation be given as a sample of the Sacred Writings in all their excellence and importance, and not as a substitute for the whole."

The authority of St. Paul, the most exalted among primitive Christians, quoted by the Reverend Editor, (page 89,) "If righteousness come by the law, Christ is dead in vain," is not, I presume, adequate to set aside, nor even applicable to the express authority of the Author of Christianity, already quoted; as the latter includes not only the Mosaic law, to which St. Paul alludes, but both law and religion, as is evident from the following passages: "Therefore all things whatever you would that men should do to you, do you even so to men; for this is the Law and the Prophets." "On these two commandments (to love God and to love our neighbours), hang all the Law and the Prophets." Every one must admit, that the gracious Saviour meant by the words "the Law and the Prophets," all the divine commandments found in the Scriptures, obedience to which is strictly required of us by the founder of that religion. *Luke*, ch. xi. ver. 28: "Blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it." *John*,

ch. xiv. ver. 15 : " If you love me, keep my commandments." Had the manifestation of love towards God with all our strength, and towards our neighbours as ourselves, been practically impossible, as maintained by the Editor, (page 112,) or had any other doctrines been necessary to lead to eternal life, Jesus of Nazareth, (in whose veracity, candour, and perfection, we have happily been persuaded to place implicit confidence,) could not, consistently with his office as the Christ of God, have enjoined the lawyer to the obedience of those two commandments, and would not have promised him eternal life as the reward of such obedience ; (*vide Luke*, ch. x. ver. 28, "*This do and thou shalt live ;*") for a man possessed of common sense and common humanity would not invite another to labour in vain by attempting what was practically impossible, nor delude him with promises of a reward upon conditions beyond his power to fulfil ; much less could a Being, in whom dwelt all truth, and who was sent with a divine law to guide mankind by his preaching and example, inculcate precepts that it was impracticable to follow. Any commandment enjoining man to love God with all his heart and all his strength, requires of us of course to direct our love towards him as the sole Father of the universe ; but does not amount to a prohibition of the pursuits necessary for life, or to an abstinence from love towards any other object ; for such love also is enjoined by the subsequent commandment. The following passages, *John*,

ch. xiv. ver. 21, "He that hath my commandments and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father; and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him:" Ch. xv. ver. 10, "If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love:" ver. 14, "Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you, &c.," and many other passages of a similar import, exhibit clearly, that love of and adherence to Jesus can be evinced solely by obedience to the divine commandments. But if the observance of those commandments be treated as practically impossible, the love of Jesus and adherence to him must likewise be so considered, and Christianity altogether regarded as existing only in theory.

I appeal to the Reverend Editor himself, whether we are to set at defiance the express commandments of Jesus, under the supposition that manifestation of the love enjoined by him is practically impossible? Yet this we must do, if we are to adopt the position of the Editor, found in his Review, page 111, "That the most excellent precepts, the most perfect law, can never lead to happiness and peace, unless by causing men to take refuge in the doctrine of the cross;" meaning, I presume, the doctrine of the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus on the cross, as an atonement for the sins of mankind.

As the Reverend Editor has most fairly and justly confined himself to arguments, founded on the authority of the divine Teacher himself, I should hope

to be allowed to beg him to point out, in order to establish his position, even a single passage pronounced by Jesus, enjoining a refuge in such a doctrine of the cross, as all-sufficient or indispensable for salvation ; so that his position, thus supported, may be placed in competition with that founded on those passages which I have quoted in the foregoing paragraph, shewing both the indispensableness and the all-sufficiency of the excellent Precepts in question to procure salvation ; and may impel us to endeavour to reconcile contradictions, which would in that case be shewn to subsist between the passages, declaring the all-sufficiency of the moral precepts preached by Christ for eternal life, and those that might be found to announce the indispensableness of the doctrine of the cross for everlasting happiness.

It is however evident, that the human race are naturally so weak, and so prone to be led astray by temptations of temporary gratifications, that the best and wisest of them fall far short of manifesting a strict obedience to the divine commandments, and are constantly neglecting the duty they owe to the Creator and to their fellow-creatures ; nevertheless, in reliance on numerous promises found in the sacred writings, we ought to entertain every hope of enjoying the blessings of pardon from the merciful Father through repentance, which is declared the only means of procuring forgiveness of our failures. I have already quoted some of these comforting passages in my Appeal, page 110 ; but as the Reverend Editor seems to have entirely overlooked them, and

omitted to notice them in any of his publications, I deem it necessary to repeat them here with a few additions. *Ezekiel*, chap. xviii. ver. 30: "Repent and turn yourselves from all your transgressions, so iniquity shall not be your ruin." *Luke*, chap. xiii. ver. 3: "Except you repent, you shall all likewise perish." Chap. xv. ver. 7: "I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine persons who need no repentance." *Matthew*, chap. ix. ver. 13: "I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance." Chap. iii. ver. 2, John the Baptist preached, saying, "Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand;" and Jesus, after his resurrection, lastly, directs his disciples, *Luke*, chap. xxiv. ver. 47, "That repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem," wherein he declares the remission of sins as an immediate and necessary consequence of repentance.

The foregoing authorities and remarks will, I trust, suffice with every candid reader, as my apology for persisting in the conviction, that the Precepts compiled and published as a guide to peace and happiness, though deficient in respect to speculative doctrines and creeds, as well as narrative, yet contain all that is essential in practical Christianity; since they teach us the performance of our duty to God and to our fellow-creatures, and the most acceptable atonement on our part to the All-merciful, when we have fallen short of that duty.



## CHAPTER II.

*Natural Inferiority of the Son to the Father.*

IN endeavouring to prove what he represents as "the most abstruse, and yet the most important of doctrines, the Deity of Jesus Christ," the Reverend Editor advances seven positions: 1st, that Jesus was possessed of ubiquity, an attribute peculiar to God alone. 2dly, That he declared that a knowledge of his nature was equally incomprehensible with that of the nature of God. 3rdly, That he exercised the power of forgiving sins, the peculiar prerogative of God. 4thly, That he claimed almighty power, "in the most unequivocal manner." 5thly, That his heavenly Father had committed to him the final judgment of all who have lived since the creation. 6thly, That he received worship due to God alone. 7thly, That he associated his own name with that of God the Father in the sacred rite of baptism.—The facts on which the Editor labours to establish these positions, however, seem to me, upon an impartial examination, not only unfavourable to his inference, but even confirmatory of the opposite opinion. For admitting for a moment that the positions of the Editor are well founded, and that the Saviour was in possession of attributes and powers

ascribed to God ; have we not his own express and often-repeated avowal, that all the powers he manifested were committed to him as the Son, by the Father of the Universe ? And does not reason force us to infer, that a Being who owes to another all his power and authority, however extensive and high, should be in reality considered inferior to that other ? Surely, therefore, those who believe God to be Supreme, possessing the perfection of all attributes, independently of all other beings, must necessarily deny the identity of Christ with God : as the sun, although he is the most powerful and most splendid of all known created things, the greatest immediate source of life and enjoyment in this world, has yet no claim to be considered identical in nature with God, who has given to the sun all the light and animating warmth which he sheds on our globe. To effect a material change without the aid of physical means, is a power peculiar to God ; yet we find this power exercised by several of the prophets on whom the gift of miracles was bestowed. Besides, it is evident, from the first chapter of Genesis, that in the beginning of the creation God bestowed on man his own likeness, and sovereignty over all living creatures. Was not his own likeness and that dominion peculiar to God, before mankind were made partakers of them ? Did God then deify man by such mark of distinction ?

The following passages, I presume, suffice to illustrate the entire dependence of the Son on God, and

his inferiority and subjection to, and his living by, him. *St. John*, chap. x. vers. 17 and 18: "Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. *This commandment have I received of my Father.*" Chap. xii. ver. 49: "For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father *who sent me, he gave me commandment* what I should say, and what I should speak." Chap. xiv. ver. 31: "But that the world may know that I love the Father, and *as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do.*" Chap. xvii. vers. 1 and 2, Jesus in his prayer—"Glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee; *as thou hast given him power* over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to *as many as thou hast given him.*" *John*, chap. iii. ver. 35: "The Father loveth the Son, and *hath given all things* into his hand." Chap. v. ver. 19: "*The Son can do nothing of himself*, but what he seeth the Father do," &c.: 22, "For the Father judgeth no man, but *hath committed* all judgment unto the Son." 30: "*I can of mine own self do nothing*: as I hear I judge; and my judgment is just; because *I seek not my own will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.*" Chap. vi. ver. 37: "All that the Father giveth me shall come to me," &c. 38: "For I came down from heaven, *not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me.*" Chap. viii. ver. 28: "*That I do nothing of myself*;

*but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things.*" Ver. 50: "I seek not my own glory; there is one that seeketh and judgeth." Chap. xiv. ver. 24: "The word which ye hear is not mine, *but the Father's which sent me.*" Ver. 31: "*As the Father gave me commandment, even so I do.*" And after his resurrection Jesus saith, ch. xx. ver. 21, "*As my Father hath sent me, even so send I you.*" Ver. 17: "I ascend unto *my Father and your Father, to my God and your God.*" *Matthew*, ch. xii. ver. 18, from *Isaiah*: "Behold *my servant, whom I have chosen*; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased; *I will put my spirit upon him*, and he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles." Ch. xxviii. ver. 18: "And Jesus came and spoke unto them, saying, *All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.*" *Luke*, ch. i. ver. 32: "He shall be great, and shall be called *the Son of the Highest*: and the *Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David.*" For testimony that he lived by the Father, see *John* vi. 57: "As the living Father *hath sent me, and I live by the Father,*" &c. Ch. v. ver. 26: "For as the Father hath life in himself, *so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself.*"

As the Reverend Editor in two instances quoted, perhaps inadvertently, the authority of the Apostles, I think myself justified in introducing some of the sentiments entertained by them on this subject, though I should be contented to deduce my argu-

ments, as proposed by the Editor, exclusively from the direct authority of Jesus himself. I shall confine myself to the quotation of one or two texts from the Epistles of St. Paul. 1st *Corinthians*, ch. xv. vers. 24—28: "Then cometh the end, when he shall have *delivered up the kingdom to God*, even the Father. For he must reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet. The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he saith, all things are put under him, it is manifest that *he is excepted which did put all things under him*. And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall *the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him*, that God may be all in all." *Colossians*, ch. i. ver. 15: "Who is the image of the invisible God, *the first-born of every creature*."

From a due attention to the purport of the above-quoted texts, and to the term *Son*, distinctly mentioned in them, the reader will, I trust, be convinced, that those powers were conferred on Jesus, and declared by himself to have been received by him from the Father, as the Messiah, Christ, or anointed Son of God, and not solely in his human capacity; and that such interpretation as declares these and other passages of a similar effect to be applicable to Jesus as a man, is an unscriptural invention. Jesus spoke of himself throughout all the Scriptures only as the promised Messiah, vested with high glory from the beginning of the world. *John*,

ch. xvii. ver. 5: "And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was." In this passage, with the same breath with which he prays for glory, he identifies *the nature* in which he does so with that under which he lived with God before the creation of the world, and of course before his assuming the office of the Messiah. Ver. 24: "Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given me *be with me where I am*; that they may behold *my glory, which thou hast given me*: for thou *lovedst me before the foundation of the world*." Here again Jesus prays, that his Apostles may witness such honour as the Father had bestowed on him, even before the foundation of the world. Ch. ix. vers. 35—37: "Dost thou" (says Jesus to a man who had been blind) "believe on the *Son of God*? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both *seen him, and it is he* (the Son of God) *that talketh with thee*." Ch. xvii. vers. 1, 2: "Father, glorify *thy Son*; as *thou hast given him* power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as *thou hast given him*." John the Baptist, who bore witness of Christ, looked not upon him in any other view than as the Son of God. *St. John*, ch. i. ver. 34: "And I saw and bare record," (said John the Baptist, pointing out the person of Jesus,) "that *this is the Son of God*." *John*, ch. viii. ver. 42: "I proceeded forth and came from God; *neither came I of myself, but*

*he sent me.*" And in numerous passages Jesus declares, that, before he assumed the office of the Messiah in this world, he was entirely subject to and obedient to the Father, from whom he received the commission to come to this world for the salvation of mankind. But apparently with the very view of anticipating any misapprehension of his nature on the part of his disciples, to whom he had declared the wonderful extent of the powers committed to him by the Father, he tells them, *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 28, "The Father is greater than I." It would have been idle to have informed them of a truth, of which as Jews they would never have entertained the smallest question, that in his mere corporeal nature Jesus was inferior to his Maker; and it must therefore have been his spiritual nature, of which he here avowed the inferiority to that of God.

"The Son" is a term which, when used without being referred to another proper name found in the context, implies invariably the Son of God throughout the whole New Testament, especially when associated with the epithet "The Father;" so the latter epithet, when it stands alone, signifies "the Father of the universe." *Matthew*, ch. xxviii. ver. 19: "Go ye, therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." Ch. xi. ver. 27: "No man knoweth the Son but the Father," &c. Vide rest of the Gospel.—It is true, indeed, that the angels of God and some of the ancients of the human race, as

well as the children of Israel, are honoured in the sacred writings with the name of "Sons of God." *Job*, ch. i. ver. 6: "There was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord." *Genesis*, ch. vi. ver. 2: "The sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were fair." *Hosea*, ch. i. ver. 10: "Then it shall be said unto them, ye are *the sons of the living God*." Yet the epithet "Son of God," with the definite article prefixed, is appropriated to Christ, the first-born of every creature, as a distinct mark of honour which *he alone* deserves.

The Saviour having declared that unity existed between the Father and himself, *John*, ch. x. ver. 30, "I and my Father are one," a doubt arose with regard to the sense in which the unity affirmed in those words should be accepted. This Jesus removes by defining the unity so expressed as a subsisting concord of will and design, such as existed amongst his Apostles, and not identity of being: vide ch. xvii. ver. 11, of *John*, "Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, *that they may be one, as we are*." Ver. 22: "The glory which thou gavest me I have given them; *that they may be one, even as we are one*." Should any one understand by these texts real unity and identity, he must believe that there existed a similar identity between each and all of the Apostles;—nay, even that the disciples also were included in the Godhead, which in that case would consist of a great many times the number of persons ascribed to the Trinity. *John*,



ch. xvii. vers. 20—23: “Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word—That *they all may be one*; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us.—That *they may be one, even as we are one. I in them, and thou in me*: that they may be made *perfect in one*.” I know not how it is possible for those who profess obedience to the word of Christ to overlook the explanation he has here so clearly given of the nature of the unity existing between him and the Father, and to adopt a contrary system apparently introduced by some Heathen writers to suit their polytheistical prejudices; but I doubt not the Editor of the *Friend of India* will admit the necessity of giving preference to divine authority over any human opinion, however prevailing it may be.

The Saviour meant unity in design and will by the assertion also, that he was in God, or dwelt in God, and God in him. *John*, ch. x. ver. 38: “That ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him,” as evidently appears from the following passages:—*John*, ch. xiv. ver. 20: “At that day ye shall know,” (addressing his Apostles,) “that I am in my Father, and *ye in me, and I in you*.” Ch. xvii. ver. 21: “That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be *one in us*.” *John*, ch. vi. ver. 56: “He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, *dwelleth in me, and I in him*.” 1 *John*, ch. iv. ver. 15: “Whosoever

shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God—God *dwelleth in him, and he in God.*” There appear but three modes in which such passages are capable of interpretation. 1st, As conveying the doctrine that the Supreme Being, the Son, and the Apostles, were to be absorbed mutually as drops of water into one whole ; which is conformable to the doctrines of that sect of Hindoo Metaphysicians who maintain, that in the end the human soul is absorbed into the Godhead ; but is quite inconsistent with the faith of all denominations of Christians. 2dly, As proving an identity of nature, with distinction of person, between the Father, the Son, and the Apostles ;—a doctrine equally inconsistent with the belief of every Christian, as multiplying the number of persons of the Godhead far beyond what has ever been proposed by any sect : or 3dly, As expressing *that unity* which is said to exist wherever there are found perfect concord, harmony, love, and obedience, such as the Son evinced towards the Father, and taught the disciples to display towards the divine will.—That the language of our Saviour can be understood in this last sense solely, will, I trust, be readily acknowledged by every candid expounder of the sacred writings, as being the only one alike warranted by the common use of words, and capable of apprehension by the human understanding. Had not experience, indeed, too clearly proved that such metaphorical expressions, when taken singly and without attention to their contexts, may be made the founda-

tion of doctrines quite at variance with the tenor of the rest of the Scriptures, I should have had no hesitation in submitting indiscriminately the whole of the doctrines of the New Testament to my countrymen ; as I should have felt no apprehension that even the most ignorant of them, if left to the guidance of their own unprejudiced views of the matter, could misconceive the clear and distinct assertions they everywhere contain of the unity of God and subordinate nature of his messenger Jesus Christ. Many of these have been already quoted ; to which may be added the following : *John*, ch. xvii. ver. 3 : “ This is life eternal, that they might know *thee the only true God*, and Jesus Christ *whom thou hast sent*.” Here Jesus in addressing the Father declares, that the means to be afforded for eternal salvation, were a knowledge of God, and of himself as the anointed messenger of God. Also, ch. xix. ver. 17, Christ saith, “ Why callest thou me good ? there is none good but one, that is God.” Here Jesus, pure as he was and without reproach, thinks it necessary to check the man who applies to him an epithet justly due to God only. Ch. xiv. ver. 1 : “ Let not your heart be troubled : ye believe in God ; believe *also* in me.” In these words Jesus commands his disciples to put their trust in God, and further to believe in him as the Messenger of God ; and thus plainly distinguishes himself from the Godhead. Nor can it for a moment be understood by the following passage, *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 9, “ He that hath seen me hath

seen the Father," that God was literally and materially visible in the Son—a doctrine which would be directly contrary to the spirit of the religion taught by Jesus, and by all the prophets of God. Vide *John*, ch. iv. ver. 24: "God is a Spirit." The Apostles also maintained a belief of the immateriality and invisibility of God. 1 *Tim.* ch. vi. ver. 16: "Whom no man hath seen nor can see." 1 *John*, ch. iv. ver. 12: "No man hath seen God at any time." Besides, Jesus explains himself in the two passages immediately succeeding, that by the phrase, "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father," he meant only that whosoever saw him and the works performed by him, witnessed proofs of the entire concord of his words and actions with the will and design of the Father, and ought therefore to have admitted the truth of his mission from God. *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 9: "He that hath seen me hath seen the Father. How sayest thou then, Shew us the Father?" Ver. 10: "Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself; but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works." Ver. 11: "Believe me, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake." We have already seen in what sense the expression "dwelleth in me" must be understood, unless we admit that all true followers of Christ are admitted as portions of the Godhead. *John*, ch. vi. ver. 56: "He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood,

dwelleth in me, and I in him." 1 *John*, ch. iv. ver. 12: "If we love one another, God dwelleth in us."

For my conviction, and for the satisfaction of those who consider the Precepts of Jesus as a guide to peace and happiness, his word, "They may be one as we are," *John*, ch. xvii. ver. 11, in defining the nature of the unity between God and Jesus, fully suffices. Disgusted with the puerile and unsociable system of Hindoo idolatry, and dissatisfied at the cruelty allowed by Moossulmanism against Non-moossulmans, I, on my searching after the truth of Christianity, felt for a length of time very much perplexed with the difference of sentiments found among the followers of Christ, (I mean Trinitarians and Unitarians, the grand divisions of them,) until I met with the explanation of the unity given by the divine Teacher himself as a guide to peace and happiness. Besides, when the Jews misunderstood the phrase used by the Saviour, "I and my Father are one," and accused him of blasphemy, (ch. x. ver. 38, "But for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God,") Jesus, in answer to the accusation, denied having made himself God, saying, vers. 34—36, "Is it not written in your Law, I said, Ye are Gods? If He called them Gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the Scripture cannot be broken; say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?" How was

it possible that Jesus, the founder of truth and true religion, should have *disavowed* the charge of making himself God by representing himself as the *Son*, honoured with sanctification *by the Father*, and *sent by him* to this world, if he were the true living God, possessed of everlasting sanctification, independently of another being? From this and all other local evidence the Pharisees and chief priests, though inveterate enemies of the Saviour, accused him to Pilate of having made himself the Son of God and King of the Jews; but relinquished the charge of making himself equal to God, or having ascribed to himself divine nature; although the latter (i. e. making himself God) was better calculated to excite the horror of the people. Vide *John*, ch. xix. ver. 7: "The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die; because he made himself the Son of God." Vide *Matthew*, ch. xxvii. ver. 37: "And set up over his head his accusation written, This is Jesus, the King of the Jews." 43: "HE TRUSTED IN GOD; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God." That the epithet God is frequently applied in the sacred Scriptures otherwise than to the Supreme Being, as pointed out by Jesus, may be shewn by the following out of many instances to be found in the Bible. *Deut.* ch. x. ver. 17: "For the Lord your God is GOD OF GODS, and Lord of Lords," &c. Ch. xxxii. ver. 21: "They have moved me to jealousy with *that which*

is not God." *Exodus*, ch. xxii. ver. 28: "*Thou shalt not revile the Gods, nor curse the ruler of thy people.*" *Joshua*, ch. xxii. ver. 22: "*The Lord God of Gods knoweth.*" *Psalms* lxxxii. ver. 1: "*God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the Gods.*" 6: "*I have said, Ye are Gods; and all of you are children of the Most High.*" *Ps.* cxxxvi. ver. 2: "*O give thanks unto the God of Gods.*" *Isaiah*, ch. xli. ver. 23: "*Shew the things that are to come hereafter, that we may know that ye are Gods.*" *Psalms* xcvi. ver. 7: "*Worship him, all ye Gods.*" *Zephaniah*, ch. ii. ver. 11: "*He will furnish all the Gods of the earth.*" *Exodus*, ch. iv. ver. 16: "*God said to Moses, that he should be to Aaron instead of God.*" Ch. vii. ver. 5: "*See, I have made thee a God to Pharaoh.*" Also *1 Corinth.* ch. viii. ver. 5: "*As there be Gods many and Lords many;*" and the verse already quoted from *John*, ch. x. vers. 34, 35: "*Jesus answered, Is it not written in your Law, Ye are Gods? If he call them Gods, to whom the word of God came,*" &c. In none of these instances is it in any degree admissible, that by the epithet God it is implied, that the human beings to whom it was attached were thereby declared to be a portion of the Godhead. Moses was to be as a God to Aaron and a God to Pharaoh, by the express command of the Almighty; but no Christian will thence argue the equality of Moses with the Father of all things. On what principle,

then, can any stress be laid in defence of the deity of the Son on the prophetic expression quoted in Hebrews from Psalm xlv. ver. 6, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever;" especially when we find in the very next verse, words that declare his subordinate nature; "Thou lovest righteousness and hatest wickedness: therefore *God, thy God*, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows"? We cannot allow much weight to the phrase "for ever," as establishing literally the eternal nature of the power of the Son, this phrase being often found metaphorically applied in the Scriptures to other created beings: as *Proverbs*, ch. xxix. ver. 14: "The king that faithfully judgeth the poor, his throne shall be established for ever." *Deut.* ch. iv. ver. 40: "And that thou mayest prolong thy days in the earth, which the Lord thy God giveth thee, for ever." Similar to this is the remarkable expression of Jesus to Mary after his resurrection, and therefore at a time when no design can be conceived to have existed that could have been advanced by his any longer withholding the knowledge of his true nature, if any thing remained unrevealed during the previous period of his mission on earth. *John*, ch. xx. ver. 17: "Go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God."

After a slight attention to the terms Lord and God being often applied to men in the Sacred



Writings, can any weight be allowed to the exclamation of the astonished disciple, *John*, ch. xx. ver. 28, "My Lord and my God;" especially as the apostle who relates the circumstance, within a few verses concludes by saying, ver. 31, "These are written that ye might believe that *Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God*;" but nowhere desires the readers of his Gospel to believe that Jesus is God? Does not common sense point out the inferiority and subordination of a Being, though called God, to one who is at the same time declared to be *his* God, *his* Father, *his* Sanctifier, and *his* Promoter to the state of exaltation?

The passage, *John*, ch. i. ver. 1, "The Word was God, and the Word was with God," which contains the term God twice, may, according to such use of the term, be interpreted without involving inconsistency with itself, or the contradiction which it apparently implies with another most decisive passage in *Deut.* ch. xxxii. ver. 39, where Moses representeth God as declaring, that *with* him there is no God: "See now that I, even I am he; and *there is no God with me*;" if it should be understood to signify in both instances the Supreme Deity. Should we follow on the other hand the interpretation adopted by Trinitarian Christians, namely, that the Godhead, though it is one, yet consists of three persons, and consequently one substance of the Godhead might abide with the other, both being equally God; we should in that

case be forced to view the Godhead in the same light as we consider mankind and other genera, for no doubt can exist of the unity of mankind :—the plurality of men consists in their persons ; and therefore we may safely, under the same plea, support the unity of man, notwithstanding the plurality of persons included under the term mankind. In that case also Christians ought in conscience to refrain from accusing Hindoos of Polytheism ; for every Hindoo we daily observe confesses the unity of the Godhead. They only advance a plausible excuse for their Polytheism, which is, that notwithstanding the unity of the Godhead, it consists of millions of substances assuming different offices correspondent to the number of the various transactions superintended in the universe by Divine Providence, which they consider as infinitely more numerous than those of the Trinitarian scheme.

The Saviour in his appeal, “ If I do not the works of my Father believe me not,” *John*, ch. x. ver. 37, meant of course the performance of works prescribed by the Father, and tending to his glory. A great number of passages in the Scriptures, a few of which I have already cited, and the constant practice of the Saviour, illustrate this fact beyond doubt. In raising Lazarus after he had died, Jesus prayed to the Father for the power of bringing him to life again, and thanked him for his compliance. *John*, ch. xi. ver. 41 : “ And Jesus lifted up his eyes and said, Father,

I thank thee that thou hast heard me." Besides, in declaring that whosoever believed [in] him would do not only the works he performed, but even works of greater importance, Jesus can never be supposed to have promised to such believers equality in power with God, or to have exalted them above himself. *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 12: "Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also, and greater works than these shall he do." Ch. vi. ver. 29: "Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye *believe* on him whom he hath sent." It must be admitted that one, who can perform works of God independently of the Deity, is either greater than or equal in power to the Almighty. The wonderful works which Jesus was empowered to perform drew a great number of the Jews to a belief in Jesus as the promised Messiah, and confirmed his apostles in their already acquired faith in the Saviour, and in the entire union of will and design that subsisted between him and the Father, as appears from the following passages: *John*, ch. vi. ver. 14, "Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that *Prophet that should come into the world.*" See also *John*, ch. x. ver. 21.

The Scriptures indeed in several places declare, that the Son was superior even to the angels in heaven, living from the beginning of the world to eternity, and that the Father created all things by

him and for him. At the same time I must, in conformity to those very authorities, believe him as produced by the Supreme Deity among created beings. *John*, ch. v. ver. 26 : " For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself," *Colossians*, ch. i. ver. 15 : " Who is the image of the invisible God, the *first-born of every creature.*"

---

## CHAPTER III.

*Separate consideration of the Seven Positions of the Reviewer.*

IN attempting to support his first position, that Jesus was possessed of ubiquity, the Reverend Editor has quoted two passages. The first is, *St. John*, ch. iii. ver. 13: "No man has ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man who is in heaven;" wherein Jesus, as the Editor conceives, declares his location both in heaven and on the earth at one time. The Editor rests entirely the force of his argument upon the term "is," in the above phrase "who is in heaven," as signifying the presence of Jesus in heaven while he was conversing with Nicodemus on earth. This argument might perhaps carry some weight with it, were not the frequent use of the present tense in a preterite or future sense observed in the Sacred Writings, and were not a great number of other passages to determine that the term "is," in this instance, must be understood in the past sense. *John*, ch. viii. ver. 58: "Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, *I am*." Here the same verb, though found in the form of the present tense, must obviously be taken in a preterite sense. *John*, ch. ix. ver. 8: "His disci-

ples *say* unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, &c.;" that is, His disciples *said* unto him. Ver. 38: "Jesus therefore again groaning in himself *cometh* to the grave," *i. e.* he *came* to the grave. *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. ver. 2: "Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man *is* betrayed to be crucified;" that is, the Son of man *is to be* betrayed and to be crucified. *Vide* the remainder of the chapter. *John*, ch. xiii. ver. 6: "Then *cometh* he to Simon Peter, &c.;" that is, *he came* to Simon Peter, &c. Again, *John*, ch. xvi. ver. 32: "That ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: yet *I am* not alone:" *i. e.* yet *I shall not be* alone. So in all the prophecies contained in the Old, as well as in the New Testament, the future tense must frequently be understood where the terms used are those grammatically appropriated to the preterite: as *Matthew*, ch. ii. ver. 18, "In Rama *was* there a voice heard," that is, *will there be* a voice heard. Ver. 15, "Out of Egypt *have I called* my Son," *i. e.* *I will call* my Son. After a diligent attention to the following passage, no one will, I presume, scruple to conclude that the Son *was* actually absent from heaven during his locality on the earth, and consequently the phrase quoted by the Editor is applicable only to the past time. *John*, ch. vi. ver. 62: "What and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he *was* before." The verb *was*, accompanied with the term *before* in this passage, positively implies the absence of Jesus

from heaven during his stay on the earth. Ch. xvi. ver. 7: "Nevertheless I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you that I *go away*. If I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I *depart*, I will send him unto you." Ver. 5: "But now I *go* my way to him that sent me." Ver. 28: "*I came forth* from the Father, and am *come* into the world: again, I *leave* the world, and *go* to the Father." Ch. xiii. ver. 36: "Jesus answered him, Whither I *go*, thou canst not follow me now, but thou shalt *follow* me afterwards." Ch. xiii. ver. 1: "Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should *depart out* of this world unto the Father." For further conviction I may safely refer even to the preceding terms of the verse relied on by the Editor:—"No man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man." For the attribute of omnipresence is quite inconsistent with the human notions of the ascent and descent effected by the Son of man. Is it possible to reconcile the contents of hundreds of such passages, consistent with reason and conformable to the established order of interpretation, to the apparent meaning of a single phrase, that, taken literally, is totally opposed to common sense? For to a being named *the Son* or *the created*, (the one term implying the other,) and sent from one mansion to another, the attribute of ubiquity can never be justly ascribed.

Besides, in examining the original Greek Testament, we find in the phrase in question, "Who is

in heaven," that the present participle ὢν, "being," is used in lieu of ἔστι, "is," viz. 'Ο ὢν ἐν τῷ ἔθανῳ; a true translation of which should be, "the *ens*" or "being in heaven:" and as the nominative case ὁ ὢν, "the being," requires a verb to complete the sense, it should be connected with the nearest verb ἀναβέβηκεν, "hath ascended," no other verb in fact existing in the sentence.

The whole verse in the original runs thus: Καὶ οὐδεὶς ἀναβέβηκεν εἰς τὸν οὐρανὸν εἰ μὴ ὁ [ἰη.] τοῦ οὐρανοῦ καταβάς, ὁ υἱὸς τοῦ ἀνθρώπου. ὁ ὢν ἐν τῷ ἔθανῳ. A verbal translation of the above would run thus: "And no one hath ascended into heaven, if not the out of heaven descender,—the Son of man—the being in heaven;" which words, arranged according to the rules of English grammar, should run thus: "And no one, except the descender from heaven, the Son of man, the being in heaven, hath ascended into heaven." In this case the presence of the Son in heaven must be understood as *referring* to the time of his ascent, and not to that of his addressing himself to Nicodemus—an explanation which, though it does not serve to establish the omnipresence of the Son urged by the Editor, ought to be satisfactory to an impartial mind.\* The second passage which the

\* See Bishop Middleton's "Doctrine of the Greek Article," Part I. page 42, Note: "We are to refer the time of the participle to the time of the act, &c. implied in the verb; for past, present, and future cannot be meant otherwise than in respect to that act." Leviticus, ch. vii, ver. 23. [33]: 'Ο ἀποφάγων—αὐτὸν ἔφαγον. ὁ



Editor quotes on this subject is, *Matthew*, ch. xviii. 20: "For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there *am* I in the midst of them." Is it not evident that the Saviour meant here, by being in the midst of two or three of his disciples, his guidance to them when joined in searching for the truth, without preferring any claim to ubiquity? We find similar expressions in the Scriptures, wherein the guidance of the Prophets of God is also meant by words that would imply their presence. *Luke*, ch. xvi. ver. 29: "Abraham saith unto him, *They have* Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them." No one will suppose that this expression is intended to signify that the Jews actually had Moses and the Prophets in person among them, or that they could hear them speak in the literal and not in the figurative sense of the words; nor can any one deduce the omnipresence of Moses and the Prophets from such expressions.

βραχίον ἡ δεξιὴς, "The offering (person) for him shall be the right shoulder." Ch. xiv. ver. 47: Ὁ ἔσθων—πλυνεῖ τα ἱμάτια αὐτοῦ, "The eating (person) shall wash his clothes." These present participles are referred to a time present with respect to the act of the verbs connected with them; but future with respect to the command of God. *John*, ch. i. ver. 49: Ὅρα—ἔδει σε, "I saw thee when thou wast." Moreover, we frequently find the present participle used in a past sense, even without reference to the time of the verb. *John*, ch. ix. ver. 25: Τυφλὸς ἄν ἄρτι βλέπω, "Being blind now I see," that is, "Having been blind now I see."

The second position advanced by the Reverend Editor is, that "Jesus ascribes to himself a knowledge and an incomprehensibility of nature equal to that of God, and peculiar to God alone;" and in attempting to substantiate this point he quotes *Matthew*, ch. xi. ver. 27, "No man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him." Here the Editor seems to rest on two grounds; 1st, That God is incomprehensible to man; 2ndly, That incomprehensibility of nature is peculiar to God alone:—whence the Rev. Editor draws his inference, that Jesus knowing the nature of God, and being himself possessed of an incomprehensible nature, is equal with God. Now I should wish to know if the Editor, by the term "incomprehensible," understands a total impossibility of comprehension in any degree, or only the impossibility of attaining to a perfect knowledge of God. If the former, I must be under the necessity of denying such a total incomprehensibility of the Godhead; for the very passage cited by the Editor, declares God to be comprehensible not to the Son alone, but also to every one who would receive revelation from the Son; and in this case the latter part of the passage, "*He to whomsoever the Son will reveal him,*" must be acknowledged as conveying an exception to the assertion made in the former part of the sentence, "Neither knoweth *any man* the Father," &c.

We find also the following passages in *John*, ch. xiv. vers. 16, 17: "And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever: even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: *but ye know him*;"—wherein Jesus ascribes to his disciples a knowledge of the Holy Ghost, whom the Editor considers one of the persons of the Godhead, possessed of the same nature with God. But if the Editor understands by the passage he has quoted, the incomprehensibility of the real nature of the Godhead, I admit the position, but deny his inference, that such an incomprehensibility proves the nature of the object to be divine, as being peculiar to God alone: for it appears evident that a knowledge of the real nature even of a common leaf, or a visible star, surpasses human comprehension; how then can a simple assertion, setting forth the incomprehensibility of an object, be considered as establishing its identity with God? In *Mark*, ch. xiii. ver. 32, "But of that day and that hour *knoweth* no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the *Son*, but the Father," we have a passage, which, though it affirms in a stronger manner an *ignorance of the day* of resurrection than that already quoted does of God, yet will not, I presume, be considered by any one as conveying the slightest insinuation of the divine nature of that day; though time is a common object of adoration amongst idolators. In treating of this point the Editor quotes

another text, *Matthew*, ch. xi. ver. 28, "Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest:" wherein Jesus declares his power of affording rest, which the Editor considers as peculiar to God. All the prophets, as well as Jesus, were from time to time sent by the Almighty to afford mental rest to mankind, by imparting to them the comforts of divine revelation; and by so doing they only fulfilled the commission given them by God: but no one ever supposed that in so doing they established claims to be considered incarnations of the Divine essence. *Proverbs*, ch. xxix. ver. 17: "Correct thy son, and he shall give thee rest; yea, he shall give delight unto thy soul." Revelation guides us to a sure belief, that it is God that affords peace of mind, effects cures of the body, and bestows all sorts of comforts on his creatures. "I thank thee," (says Jesus, *Matthew*, ch. xi. ver. 25,) "O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes." Both our perceptions, indeed, and sacred authorities point out, that he lavishes all these gifts on us through prophets, physicians, and other physical causes, that are not considered by any sect as of a divine nature.

The third position is, that Jesus exercised in an independent manner, the prerogative of forgiving sins, which is peculiar to God alone; and the Reverend Editor quotes the passage, *Mark*, ch. ii. ver. 5, "Thy sins be forgiven thee;" and the 9th verse,

"For whether is it easier to say, Thy sins be forgiven thee, or to say, Arise and walk?" Taking those texts as the grounds of his position, I therefore beg to call the attention of the Editor to the passage almost immediately following, in which the evangelical writer intimates, that this power of forgiving sins, as well as of healing men, was given by the Almighty: "But when the multitude saw it, they marvelled, and glorified God, *who had given* such power unto *men*." Does not this passage convey an express declaration, that Jesus was as much dependent on God in exercising the power of forgiving sins and healing the sick, as the prophets who came forth from God before him? The apostles, who witnessed the power of forgiving sins in the Saviour, were thoroughly impressed with a belief that it was the Almighty Father who forgave sins through the Son. *Acts*, ch. v. vers. 31, 32: "*Him hath God exalted* with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, *and forgiveness of sins*. And we are his witnesses of these things." Ch. xiii. ver. 38: "Be it known, therefore, men and brethren, that *through this man*, (meaning the Saviour,) is preached unto you the *forgiveness of sins*." I know not how far religious zeal in the breasts of many of the followers of Christ may excuse them in encroaching upon the prerogatives which revelation and reason ascribe to the Divine Majesty alone; but Jesus himself clearly avows, that the power of forgiving sins had its source and origin

in God alone, as appears from his petitioning the Father to forgive those that were guilty of bringing the death of the cross upon him, the greatest of all imaginable crimes. *Luke*, ch. xxiii. ver. 34 : " Father, forgive them," (says Jesus,) " for they know not what they do ;" and from his directing all those that followed him to pray the Father alone for forgiveness of sins. *Luke*, ch. xi. ver. 4 : " And forgive us our sins." *Matthew*, ch. vi. ver. 14 : " If ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will forgive you."

The fourth position advanced by the Editor is, that " Almighty power is also claimed by Jesus in the most unequivocal manner." In endeavouring to demonstrate this, the Editor notices three passages of *John*, (ch. v. vers. 21—23,) " As the Father raiseth up the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son : that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father." A candid inquirer after truth must, I think, feel surprised and disappointed, that in quoting these texts, the Editor should have overlooked the force of the words, in which the Son declares that he hath received the commission to judge from the Father : " For the Father judgeth no man, but *hath committed all judgment unto the Son.*" I am ready to admit, indeed, that, taken simply as they stand, the words, " As the Father raiseth up the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son quicken-

eth whom he will," and, "That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father," might very readily be understood as implying an assertion of equality with the Father. But this affords one of numerous instances of the danger of resting an opinion on the apparent meaning of the words of insulated passages of Scripture, without attention to the context; for I am convinced that no unprejudiced person can peruse the verses preceding and subsequent to those quoted by the Editor, without feeling that a more explicit disavowal of equality with God can hardly be expressed by language than that which they contain. I must therefore beg permission to give the entire passage in this place, though some parts of it have been quoted before in support of arguments already discussed. It is to be observed, that the occasion of the expressions here made use of by Jesus, was the accusation brought against him by the Jews, that he had made himself equal with God. *John*, ch. v. vers. 19—36: "Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, *The Son can do nothing of himself*, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath

committed all judgment unto the Son : that all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father who hath sent him. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and *believeth on him that sent me*, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation ; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God : and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself, *so hath he given to the Son* to have life in himself ; and *hath given him authority* to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this : for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the grave shall hear his voice, and shall come forth ; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life ; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. *I can of mine ownself do nothing : as I hear, I judge :* and my judgment is just, *because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me.* If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. There is another that beareth witness of me ; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from man : but these things I say, that ye might be saved. He was a burning and a shining light : and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light. But I have greater witness



than that of John: for the works which the *Father hath given me to finish*, the same works that I do, *bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.*"

It would have been strange indeed had Jesus, in repelling the accusation of blasphemy, which had wrought on the minds of the Jews so far that they sought to kill him, confirmed their assertion, that he made himself equal with God, and thus prematurely endangered his own life; but we find that so far from being further incensed by the explanation above quoted, they seem to have quietly acquiesced in his appeal to their own Scriptures, that the Messiah should have all the power and authority which he asserted the Father had given to himself. Ver. 46: "For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me." The only text in the writings of Moses that refers to the nature of the Messiah, is that of *Deuteronomy*, ch. xviii. vers. 15 and 18, quoted by St. Peter in the Acts of the Apostles, ch. iii. ver. 22, and by St. Stephen, ch. vii. ver. 37, Moses said to the children of Israel, "The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, *like unto me*; unto him ye shall hearken." The words which the Lord addressed to Moses were exactly of the same import: "I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, *like unto thee*," &c. It was, no doubt, to this remarkable passage that Jesus referred, and nothing can more distinctly prove the light in which he wished to be considered, namely, that of a Messenger

or Prophet of God. But this is not the only instance in which Jesus entirely disclaims the attribute of omnipotence. On many other particular occasions he declares, in the strongest language, his want of almighty power, and his constant need of divine influence. *Matthew*, ch. xx. ver. 23: "And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, *is not mine to give*; but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father." Ch. xii. ver. 28: "But if I cast out devils *by the Spirit of God*, then the kingdom of God is come unto you." Ch. xxvi. ver. 39: "And he went a little further, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt." Ver. 42: "He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done." *Luke*, ch. xxii. ver. 32: "But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not," &c. *John*, ch. xii. ver. 27: "Father, save me from this hour." Whosoever honours God, cannot, I presume, consistently refuse to honour his Prophet, whom he dignified with the name of "Son of God;" and as he honours God, he will also honour that Prophet, though he be well aware of the distinction between the Almighty and his chosen Son. The honour paid to the Prophet may in this sense be fairly considered the test of the real degree of respect

entertained for God—as Jesus saith, *Matthew*, ch. x. ver. 40, “He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.” The obvious meaning of which words is, As far as men listen to your instructions, they listen to mine, and in so far they receive the commandments of God who hath sent me. Prejudice alone could, I think, infer from such expressions, that those who received the Apostles were literally receiving God himself under their form and substance. Equally demonstrative of prejudice, I conceive, would it be to deduce the identity or equality of the Father and the Son from the following passage, *John*, ch. v. ver. 23: “That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father who hath sent him.” For in this very passage the Son is represented as the Messenger of the Father, and for that reason only entitled to honour. That the preposition “as” implies here, as in many other places, likeness in nature and quality, and not in exact degree of honour, is illustrated by its obvious meaning in the last verse of *Matthew* v., “Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father in heaven is perfect;” for by these words no one can conceive, that equality in degree of perfection between God and the disciples is intended to be enjoined.

The fifth position is, that his heavenly Father had committed to Jesus the final judgment of all who have lived since the creation. I readily admit the

correctness of this position, and consider the fact as confirming the opinion maintained by me, and by numerous other followers of Christ, as to the Son's total dependence on the commission of God for his power in administering such judgment. I agree also with the Reverend Editor, in esteeming the nature of this office most important; and that nothing but the gift of supernatural wisdom can qualify a being to judge the conduct of thousands of millions of individuals, living at different times from the beginning of the world to the day of resurrection. It is however perfectly consistent with the omnipotence and wisdom of God, who is declared by revelation to be "able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham," (*Matthew*, ch. iii. ver. 9,) and with whom all things are possible, (*Luke*, ch. i. ver. 37,) to bestow wisdom equal to the important nature of this office on the first-born of every creature, whom he has anointed and exalted even above his angels. But the Editor goes much further than I am willing to follow him, in concluding the omniscience of the Son, from the circumstance of his distributing final judgment; since Jesus not only disclaimed that attribute, but even expressly avowed that he received his qualifications for exercising judgment from God. With respect to his disclaiming omniscience, see *Mark*, ch. xiii. ver. 32: "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father." Omniscience, as the Editor must be well aware, has no limit; but

here Jesus expressly declares, that he is ignorant of the day appointed by the Father for the resurrection and judgment. What words can be more expressly declaratory than these of the finite nature of the knowledge granted to Jesus, however its extent may actually surpass our limited capacity? As a proof that his judicial authority is derived from God, see *John*, ch. v. vers. 26 and 27: "For as the Father hath life in himself, so *hath he given* to the Son to have life in himself; and *hath given him authority* to execute judgment also." 30: "I can of mine ownself do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me." Is it possible to misunderstand the assertion contained in these words, that both the authority and the ability to judge are gifts bestowed on the Son by the omnipotent Father?

The sixth position is, that in several instances Jesus accepted worship "due to no man, but to God alone;" and instances of his receiving worship from a blind man, a leper, from mariners, and from his disciples, are adduced from the evangelical writings. — Every one must admit that the word "worship," both in common acceptation and in the Scriptural writings, is used sometimes as implying an external mark of religious reverence paid to God, and at other times, as signifying merely the token of civil respect due to superiors; and that concurrent circumstances in every instance determine the real sense in which

the word should be taken. Among the Prophets of God, Jesus was not the only one that permitted himself to be worshipped, as we find Daniel the Prophet allowing himself such worship. *Daniel*, ch. ii. ver. 46: "Then the king Nebuchadnezzar fell upon his face, and worshipped Daniel." Daniel, like Jesus, neither rebuked the man who worshipped him, nor did he feel indignant at such a tribute of respect; yet we cannot find any subsequent assertion that he had offended God by suffering himself to be the object of the king's *worship* in this instance. Besides, Jesus himself uses the word worship in the latter sense, (I mean that of civil reverence,) in one of the evangelical parables, where he represents a servant as worshipping his master. *Matthew*, ch. xviii. ver. 26: "The servant therefore fell down and worshipped him." From the circumstance of Jesus positively commanding human beings to worship God alone in spirit, and not in any form or shape, either human or angelic; as *John*, ch. iv. ver. 24: "God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth." *Matthew*, ch. iv. ver. 10: "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve." And from the circumstance of his rebuking the man who called him "good master," on the ground that the term "good" should be peculiarly applied to God alone, (*Matt.* ch. xix. ver. 17,) we necessarily conclude that Jesus accepted worship only as a mark of human respect and acknowledgment of gratitude. Let us moreover

ascertain from the context, the sentiments which the blind man, the leper, the mariners, and the disciples of Jesus, entertained of his nature; and we can no longer hesitate to believe, that they meant by the worship they offered, only the manifestation of their reverence for him as a superior indeed, yet still as a created being. The question is, Did those that offered worship to Jesus evince that they believed him to be God, or one of the three persons of the Godhead, and equal to God? Nothing of the kind—the blind man after his cure, spoke of Jesus as a prophet, and a righteous man, and believed him when he said he was the Son of God. *John*, ch. ix. ver. 31: “Now we know,” (says the blind man,) “that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Ver. 33: “If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.” And in answer to the question of Jesus, “Dost thou believe on the Son of God?” he answers, “Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him,” ver. 38. The unclean spirit which is said in *Mark* to have worshipped Jesus, “Cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of the most high God? I *adjure thee by God*, that thou torment me not.” *Mark*, ch. v. ver. 7. This adjuration would have been absurd if Jesus were himself addressed as God; and clearly shews, that the worship offered, was to deprecate the power of a being whose nature was subordinate to that of God, by

whose name he was adjured. The leper, too, glorified God, while to Jesus he gave only thanks for being the instrument of his cure. *Luke*, ch. xviii. vers. 15, 16: "And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, and fell down on his face at his feet, *giving him thanks.*" The mariners who worshipped Jesus, declared at the same instant, "Of a truth thou art the Son of God." *Matthew*, ch. xiv. ver. 33. The woman of Canaan, who is also stated in *Matthew*, ch. xvi. ver. 25, to have worshipped Jesus, addressed him, ver. 22, as "the son of David," by which term she certainly would not have designated & being whom she worshipped as God. Peter, the most celebrated of his disciples, shewed his faith in acknowledging Jesus merely as the Christ, or in other words with the same exact sense, *the anointed of God*—which is certainly far from implying "very God." *Mark*, ch. viii. ver. 29. Even after the crucifixion we find the disciples conversing of Jesus only as "a prophet, mighty in deed and in word before God and all the people." *Luke*, ch. xxiv. ver. 19. It was Jesus himself risen from the dead whom they addressed, yet throughout the remainder of the chapter, which concludes with the account of his being carried up to heaven, they are only further taught that this prophet was the promised Messiah, but by no means that it was their duty to worship him as God. Peter in the name of all the disciples de-



clares, *John*, ch. vi. ver. 69, "We believe and are sure that thou art [that] Christ, the son of the living God." And as already observed, the disciple John declares, that the object of the gospel is, "that it may be believed that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God." *John*, ch. xx. ver. 31. When the leper prayed to Jesus for cure, he addressed him only with the term *Kυριος*, (*Matthew*, ch. viii. ver. 2,) which in Greek is used as synonymous to Lord or Master, and often applied to superior persons.

Every Christian is morally bound to evince obedience to the commandments of Jesus, and exert himself to follow his example. It behoves us, therefore, to ascertain, what his commandments are with regard to the object of sacred worship and prayer, and in what manner he himself performed those solemn religious duties. The very act of prayer indeed implies an acknowledgment of inferiority to the being adored; but though Trinitarians affirm that such devotion was paid by Jesus only in his human capacity, his form of prayer ought still to be sufficient to guide human creatures as to the Being to whom their prayers should be addressed. Let us examine, therefore, whether Jesus in his acknowledged human capacity ever offered worship or prayer to what Trinitarians term the second or third person of the Godhead, or once directed his followers to worship or pray to either of them. But so far from finding a single direction of the kind, we observe on the contrary, that Jesus strictly enjoins us to worship the

Father alone in that form of prayer which he offered for our guidance. *Matthew*, ch. vi. ver. 9 : " After this manner therefore pray ye, *Our Father* which art in heaven," &c. " Pray to *thy Father* which is in secret : and *thy Father*, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly." In the same way, when the Saviour himself prays, he addresses the Father alone. *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. ver. 53 : " Thinkest thou," says Jesus to Peter, " that I cannot now *pray to my Father?*" *John*, ch. xvi. ver. 26 : " I will *pray the Father* for you." *Luke*, ch. xxii. ver. 41, 42 : " And he (the Saviour), was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, saying, *Father*, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me." *Mark*, ch. xiv. vers. 35, 36 : " And fell on the ground, and prayed, that if it were possible the hour might pass from him. And he said, *Abba, Father*, all things are possible unto thee." *Luke*, ch. vi. ver. 12 : " He went out unto a mountain to pray, and continued all night *in prayer to God.*" *Luke*, ch. x. ver. 21 : " In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth." *John*, ch. xi. ver. 41 : " And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me." *Matthew*, ch. xxvii. ver. 46 : " My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" *John*, ch. iv. ver. 22 : " Ye worship ye know not what ; we know what we worship." No creed drawn up by men, nor opinion entertained by any sect, can by an unbiassed searcher after the

true doctrines of Christianity, he suffered to set aside the express authority and constant example of the gracious author of this religion.

The last position is, that Jesus associated his own name with that of God in the rite of baptism, intended to remain in force to the end of the world, and ordained by the passage, *Matthew*, ch. xxviii. ver. 19, "Go ye and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost." A profession of belief in God is unquestionably common to all the religions supposed to have been founded upon the authority of the Old Testament; but each is distinguished from the other by a public profession of faith in their respective founders, expressing such profession in a language that may clearly exhibit the inferior nature of those founders to the Divine Being, of whom they declare themselves the messengers. This system has been carried on from the first, and was no doubt intended to serve as a perpetual distinguishing mark of faith. The Jews claim that they have revelation, rendering a belief not in God alone, but in Moses also, incumbent upon them. *Exodus*, ch. xiv. ver. 31: "The people feared the Lord, and believed the Lord, and his servant Moses." But the term "his servant Moses," in this passage, suffices to prove the subordination of Moses, though declared, equally with God, to be an object of their belief. In like manner Mohummudans, in the first acknowledgment of that system of religion, are directed to profess

faith in God, and also in Mohummuḍ, his messenger, in the following form : لا إله إلا الله محمد رسول الله  
 “There is no God except the true God, Mohummuḍ is his messenger.” The term “his messenger” removes every doubt of Mohummuḍ’s identity or equality with God ; so the epithet “Son” found in the passage, “Baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son,” &c. ought to be understood and admitted by every one as expressing the created nature of Christ, though the most highly exalted among all creatures. If baptism were administered to one embracing Christianity in the name of the Father and the Holy Ghost, he would thereby no more become enrolled as a Christian, than as a Jew or as a Mohummuḍan ; for both of them, in common with Christians, would readily submit to be baptized in the name of God and his prevailing influence over the universe. But as Christianity requires peculiarly a faith in Jesus, as the promised Messiah, the gracious Saviour enjoins baptism in the name of *the Son* also, so as to distinguish his happy followers from the Jews and the rest of the people. A mere association of names in divine commandments therefore never can be considered as tending to prove identity or equality between the subjects of those names :—such junction of names is found frequently in the Sacred Writings without establishing unity among the persons whom those names imply.

The Editor quotes the following passage, *Matthew*, ch. xxviii. ver. 18: “All power in heaven and

earth is delivered unto me," recommending it as a sure proof of the deity of Jesus. I regret very much that the force of the expression "is delivered unto me," found in this passage, should have escaped the discerning notice of the Reverend Editor. Does not the term "delivered" shew evidently an entire dependence of Jesus upon the Being who has committed to him such power? Is it consistent with the nature of an omnipotent God to exercise power delivered to him by another being, or to confess that the power he possesses has been received by him from another?

As to the question of the Editor, "Did Mohumud, arrogant as he was, ever make such a declaration as Jesus did, namely, that 'I am with you always even to the end of the world'?" I will not renew the subject, as it has been already discussed in examining the first position. I only entreat the attention of the Editor to the following assertions of Mohummoud, known to almost all Moosulmans who have the least knowledge of their own religion:

“*Truly*” *أن الله عز وجل بعثني رحمة وهدى للعالمين*  
 the great and glorious God raised  
 me as *mercy* and *guidance* to *worlds*.”  
 “*I*” *كنت اول النبيين في الخلق وَاخِـرهم في البعث*  
*was the first* of all Prophets in creation, and the  
 last in appearance.” *كنت نبيا وادم في الماء والطين*  
*was a Prophet* when Adam was in earth and water.”

أَنَا سَيِّدُ الْمُرْسَلِينَ وَلَا فَخْرَ لِي “ I am the Lord of those that were sent by God. This is no boast to me.”  
 أَمَّا ظِلِّي عَلَى رُؤُسِ أُمَّتِي “ My shadow is on the head only of my followers.”  
 مَنْ رَأَانِي فَقَدْ رَأَى اللَّهَ “ He who has seen me has seen God.”  
 مَنْ أَطَاعَنِي فَقَدْ أَطَاعَ اللَّهَ وَ مَنْ عَصَانِي فَعَصَى اللَّهَ  
 “ He who has obeyed me, has obeyed God: and he who has sinned against me, has sinned against God.”

It is, however, fortunate for Moossulmans, that from want of familiarity and intimate connexion between the primitive Mohummuddans and their contemporary heathens, the doctrines of Monotheism taught by Mohummud, and entertained by his followers, have not been corrupted by polytheistical notions of Pagans, nor have heathen modes of worship or festivals been introduced among Moossulmans of Arabia and Turkey as a part of their religion. Besides, metaphorical expressions having been very common among Oriental nations, Mohummuddans could not fail to understand them in their proper sense, although these expressions may throw great difficulty in the way of an European Commentator even of profound learning.



## CHAPTER IV.

*Inquiry into the Doctrine of the Atonement.*

ALL the texts collected by the Reverend Editor in his review from the authority of the divine Teacher, in favour of the second important doctrine of the cross, implying the vicarious sacrifice of Jesus as an atonement for the sins of mankind, are as follow : " I am the living bread which came down from heaven : if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever." His giving his " flesh for the life of the world." " I lay down my life for my sheep." " The Son of man is come to give his life a ransom for many." Is any one of these passages, I would ask, in the shape of an explicit commandment, or are they more than a mere statement of facts requiring figurative interpretation ? For it is obvious that an attempt to take them in their direct sense, especially the first, (" I am the living bread ;—if any man eat of this," &c.) would amount to gross absurdity. Do they reasonably convey any thing more than the idea, that Jesus was invested with a divine commission to deliver instructions leading to eternal beatitude, which whosoever should receive should live for ever ? And that the Saviour, foreseeing that the imparting of those instructions would, by exciting the

anger and enmity of the superstitious Jews, cause his life to be destroyed, yet hesitated not to persevere in their promulgation ; as if a king, who hazards his life to procure freedom and peace for his subjects, were to address himself to them, saying, " I lay down my life for you." This interpretation is fully confirmed by the following passages. *Luke*, ch. iv. ver. 43 : " And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also ; *for therefore am I sent.*" Ch. ii. vers. 47—49 : " And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. And when they (his parents) saw him, they were amazed : and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us ? Behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me ? wist ye not that *I must be about my Father's business ?*" Wherein Jesus declares, that the sole object of his mission was to preach and impart divine instructions. Again, after having instructed his disciples in all the divine law and will, as appears from the following text, " For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me ; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me," (*John*, ch. xvii. ver. 8,) Jesus in his communing with God manifests that he had completed the object of his mission by imparting divine commandments to mankind. " I have glorified thee on the earth, *I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do.*" Had



his death on the cross been the work, or part of the work, for the performance of which Jesus was sent into this world, he as the founder of truth would not have declared himself to have finished that work prior to his death.

That Jesus should ride on a colt, should receive an offer of vinegar to drink, and should be wounded with a spear after he had delivered up the ghost, as well as his death on the cross, were events prophesied in the Old Testament, and consequently these were fulfilled by Jesus. Vide *Luke*, ch. xxiv. vers. 26 and 27: "Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses and all the Prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself." But we are unhappily at a loss to discover any other design in each of these events, which happened to Jesus before his ascent to heaven. I am therefore sorry that I must plead my inability to make a satisfactory reply to the question of the Editor, "Had ever Jesus transgressed his heavenly Father's will, that he underwent such afflictions?" I can only say, that we find in the scriptures that several other Prophets in common with Jesus suffered great afflictions, and some even death, as predicted. But I know not whether those afflictions were the consequences of the sins committed by them or by their parents, or whether these distresses were experienced by them through some divine purpose unknown to us; as some scriptural authorities shew beyond doubt, that

man may be made liable to sufferings for some secret divine purpose, without his or his parents having perpetrated any remarkable crime. (*John*, ch. ix. ver. 3: "Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned nor his parents; but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.") The latter alternative (namely, that the righteous Prophets suffered afflictions and even death for some divine purpose, known thoroughly to God alone) seems more consistent with the contents of the sacred writings, such as follow: *Mark*, ch. xii. vers. 1—9: "And he began to speak unto them by parables. A certain man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine fat, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country. And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard. And they caught him, and beat him, and sent him away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded him in the head, and sent him away shamefully handled. And again he sent another; and him they killed, and many others; beating some, and killing some. Having yet therefore one Son, his well-beloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying, They will reverence my Son. But these husbandmen said among themselves, This is the heir; come, let us kill him, and the inheritance shall be ours. And they took him, and killed him, and cast him out of the vineyard. What shall

therefore the Lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard unto others." *John*, ch. xv. vers. 21, 22: "But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin." This parable and these passages give countenance to the idea, that God suffered his Prophets, and Jesus, his beloved Son, to be cruelly treated and slain by the Jews, for the purpose of taking away every excuse that they might offer for their guilt.

In explaining the objects of Jesus's death on the cross, the Editor confidently assumes, that "If we view Jesus Christ as atoning for the sins of men, we have every thing perfectly in character: he became incarnate to accomplish that which could have been effected by neither men nor angels." I should therefore wish to know whether Jesus, whom the Editor represents as God incarnate, suffered death and pain for the sins of men in his divine nature, or in his human capacity? The former must be highly inconsistent with the nature of God, which, we are persuaded to believe by reason and tradition, is above being rendered liable to death or pain; since the difference we draw between God, and the objects that are not God, is, that one cannot be subjected to death or termination, and the other is finite and liable to mortality. That the effects of Christ's appearance

on earth, whether with respect to the salvation or condemnation of mankind, were finite, and therefore suitable to the nature of a finite being to accomplish, is evident from the fact, that to the present time millions of human beings are daily passing through the world, whom the doctrines he taught have never reached, and who of course must be considered as excluded from the benefit of his having died for the remission of their sins. The latter, namely, that Jesus suffered death and pain in his human capacity as an atonement for the offences of others, seems totally inconsistent with the justice ascribed to God, and even at variance with those principles of equity required of men; for it would be a piece of gross iniquity to afflict one innocent being who had all the human feelings, and who had never transgressed the will of God, with the death of the cross for the crimes committed by others, especially when he declares such great aversion to it, as is manifest from the following passages. *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. vers. 37, 39, 42 and 43: "And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy. And prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup (meaning death) pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done." *Mark*, ch. xiv. ver. 36: "And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; take away

this cup from me : nevertheless not what I will, but what thou wilt." *Luke*, ch. xxii. vers. 42 and 44 : " Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me ; nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done. And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly : and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood, falling down to the ground." *John*, ch. xii. ver. 27 : " Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say ? Father, save me from this hour : but for this cause came I unto this hour." Do not these passages evidently shew, that Jesus in his human capacity (according to the Trinitarian phrase) felt averse to death and pain, and that he earnestly prayed that he might not be subjected to it ? Jesus, however, knowing that the will of the Father rendered such death unavoidable, yielded to it as predicted. *John*, ch. xi. vers. 17 and 18 : " Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life that I might take it again : no man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself ; I have power to lay it down and I have power to take it again : this commandment have I received of my Father." *Matthew*, ch. xxvi. vers. 53 and 54 : " Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels ? But how then shall the scripture be fulfilled, that thus it must be ?" The iniquity of one's being sentenced to death as an atonement for the fault committed by another, is so palpable, that although in many countries the human race think themselves justified in detaining

the persons of those men who, voluntarily making themselves responsible for the debt or the persons of others, fail to fulfil their engagements ; nevertheless, every just man among them would shudder at the idea of one's being put to death for a crime committed by another, even if the innocent man should willingly offer his life in behalf of that other.

In endeavouring to prove Jesus's atonement for sin by his death, the Reverend Editor urges, " Is he called the Saviour of men because he gave them moral precepts, by obeying which they might obtain the Divine favour, with the enjoyment of heaven as their just desert ? or, because he died in their stead, to atone for their sins and procure for them every blessing, &c. ? If Jesus be termed a Saviour merely because he instructed men, he has this honour in common with Moses and Elijah and John the Baptist, neither of whom however assumed the title of Saviour." We find the title " Saviour" applied frequently in the divine writings to those persons who had been endued with the power of saving people, either by inculcating doctrines, or affording protection to them, although none of them atoned for the sins of mankind by their death. *Obadiah*, ver. 21 : " And *saviours* shall come up on mount Zion to judge the mount of Esau ; and the kingdom shall be the Lord's." *Nehemiah*, ch. ix. ver. 27 : " And according to thy manifold mercies thou gavest them *saviours*, who saved them out of the hand of their enemies." *2 Kings*, ch. xiii. ver. 5 : " The Lord

gave Israel a *saviour*, so that *they* went out from under the hand of the Syrians." How could, therefore, the Editor, a diligent student of the Bible, lay such stress upon the application of the term "Saviour" to Jesus, as to adduce it as a proof of the doctrine of atonement; especially when Jesus himself declares frequently, that he saved the people solely through the inculcation of the word of God? *John*, ch. xv. ver. 3: "Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you." Ch. v. ver. 24: "He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life." Ch. vi. ver. 63: "The words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life:"—wherein Jesus represents himself as a Saviour, or a distributor of eternal life, in his capacity of divine teacher.

Jesus is of course justly termed and esteemed a Saviour, for having instructed men in the Divine will and law, never before so fully revealed. Would it degrade Jesus to revere him as a divine teacher, because Moses and the Prophets before him delivered to the people divine instructions? Or would it depreciate the dignity of Jesus, to believe that he in common with several other prophets underwent afflictions and death? Such an idea is indeed unscriptural, for God represents the Christ as a Prophet equal to Moses, *Deut.* ch. xviii. ver. 18. Jesus declares himself to have come to fulfil the law taught by Moses, (*Matthew*, ch. v. ver. 7,) "Think not

that I am come to destroy the Law and the Prophets, I am not come to destroy but to fulfil;" and strictly commands his disciples and the people at large to obey whatever Moses had taught. Ch. xxiii. vers. 2, 3: "Saying, The Scribes and Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not."

I am sorry that I cannot, without offending my conscience, agree with the Reverend Editor in the opinion, that "If Jesus be esteemed merely a teacher, the greater degree of honour must be given to Moses, for it was in reality his law that Jesus explained and established."

It is true that Moses began to erect the everlasting edifice of true religion, consisting of a knowledge of the unity of God, and obedience to his will and commandments; but Jesus of Nazareth has completed the structure, and rendered his law perfect. To convince the Editor of this fact, I beg to call his attention to the following instances found even in a single chapter, as exhibiting the perfection to which Jesus brought the Law given by Moses and other Prophets. *Matthew*, ch. v. vers. 21, 22: "Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and who-



soever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council : but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire." Vers. 27, 28 : " Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery : but I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery." Vers. 31, 32 : " It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement : but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery." Verses 38, 39 : " Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth : but I say unto you, that ye resist not evil : but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also." Vers. 43—45 : " Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy : but I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them that despitefully use you, and persecute you ; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven : for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust." Now I hope I may be justified in expressing my belief, (though it varies from the declaration made by the Editor,) that no *greater* honour can be justly given to any teacher of the will of God than what is due to the *author* of the doctrines just quoted, which, with a power no

less than standing miracles could produce, carry with them proofs of their divine origin to the conviction of the high and low, the learned and unlearned.

The Editor, in page 101,\* lays much stress on circumstances, the very minuteness of which, he thinks, "serves to enhance their value as testimonies." He alludes to the epithet "Lamb of God" having been twice applied to Jesus by John the Baptist, two of whose disciples were thereby induced to become followers of Jesus. This is considered by the Editor as implying an admission on the part of Christ, that as a lamb, particularly the Paschal Lamb, was used in sacrifice as an atonement for sins, he also came into the world to sacrifice his life as an atonement for sin. We find, however, the term "lamb," as well as "sheep," applied in other places, where no allusion to the sacrificial lamb can be well imagined, and from which we infer that these were epithets generally applied to innocence subjected to persecution; a meaning which sufficiently accords with the use of the word lamb in the instance in question. We have those terms applied by Jesus to his disciples in *John*, ch. xxi. vers. 15—17, where he commands Simon Peter "to feed his lambs," "to feed his sheep;" and in ch. x. vers. 26, 27, "Ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep."—"My sheep hear my voice." Now many of the apostles suffered death in consequence of their endeavours to withdraw men from

\* [London edition, page 37.]

sin: but the Editor will not thence, I presume, maintain, though it follow from his argument, that the term "lamb" was applied to them, to shew that by their death, they also atoned for the sins of mankind. The Reverend Editor might have spared the arguments he has adduced to prove, that Jesus was sent into this world as the long-expected Messiah, intended to suffer death and difficulties like other prophets who went before him; as the Editor may find in the compilation in question, as well as in its defence, Jesus of Nazareth represented as "The Son of God," a term synonymous with that of Messiah, the highest of all the prophets; and his life declares him to have been, as represented in the Scriptures, pure as light, innocent as a lamb, necessary for eternal life as bread for a temporal one, and great as the angels of God, or rather greater than they. He also might have omitted to quote such authority as shews, that Christ, being a mediator between God and men, "declared that whatsoever they (his apostles) shall ask in his name, the Father will give them;" for the Compiler, in his defence of the Precepts of Jesus, repeatedly acknowledged Christ as the Redeemer, Mediator, and Intercessor with God, in behalf of his followers. But such intercession does not, I presume, tend to a proof of the deity or the atonement of Jesus, as interpreted by the Editor; for God is represented in the sacred books to have often shewn mercy to mankind for righteous men's sakes; how much more then would he naturally

manifest his favour towards those who might petition him in the name of one, whom he anointed and exalted over all creatures and prophets! *Genesis*, ch. xxx. ver. 27 : "I have learned by experience, that the Lord hath blessed me for thy sake." *Jeremiah*, ch. xxvii. ver. 18 : "But if they be prophets, and if the word of the Lord be with them, let them now make intercession to the Lord of hosts." Moreover, we find angels declared to have been endued with the power of pardoning and redeeming men on various occasions. *Genesis*, ch. xlviii. ver. 16 : "The Angel which redeemed me from all evil, bless the lads" ! *Exodus*, ch. xxiii. vers. 20, 21 : "Behold, I send an Angel before thee, to keep thee in the way, and to bring thee into the place which I have prepared. Beware of him, and obey his voice, provoke him not ; for he will not pardon your transgressions : for my name is in him."

With regard to this doctrine I have carefully noticed every argument advanced by the Editor, from the authority of Jesus himself, in its support ; and have adduced such arguments as may be used by those that reject that doctrine, and which they rest on the authority of the same Divine Teacher ; leaving the decision of the subject to the discreet judgment of the public, but declining to deliver any opinion, as an individual, as to the merits thereof.

---

## CHAPTER V.

*On the Doctrines and miraculous Narrations of the New Testament.*

I REGRET that the Editor should have accused the Compiler of having charged "on the dogmas or doctrines of Christianity those wars and that bloodshed which have occurred between nations merely termed Christians." The Compiler in his defence of the Precepts of Jesus, has ascribed such disputes and contentions not to any thing contained in the Scriptures, but to the different interpretations of dogmas which he esteemed not essential for salvation. In order to convince the Editor of the accuracy of my assertion, I entreat his attention to page 18, line 22, and page 22, line 24, of my defence of the compiled Precepts, under the designation of "An Appeal to the Christian Public."\*

The Editor observes, that "wars and bloodshed existed before the promulgation of Christianity in the world; neither Christianity, therefore, nor its dogmas, created the causes of wars and bloodshed. They existed in the human mind long before its doctrines were published;" and that "quarrels and feuds between the Arians and the Orthodox in the fourth and the fifth centuries were little more than struggles

\* [See above, p. 117, line 118, and p. 120, lines 16—20.]

for power and wealth." Although human frailty and want of perfection in men are in fact esteemed as the first and original causes of their improper conduct and wicked deeds, yet in the ordinary acceptation of the term "cause," good or evil acts are invariably attributed to their immediate motives, ascertained from circumstantial evidence; and these acts are consequently held to entitle their respective agents to praise or reproach.—But as the motives of actions and the secrets of the human heart are in truth known to God alone, it is indeed beyond my power to establish in a satisfactory manner, that the majority of the primitive Arians and Trinitarians were excited by their mistaken religious zeal to slay each other, and not by a desire of power and worldly advancement. I would appeal, however, to the Editor himself, whether it would not be indeed very illiberal to suppose, that almost all the Christian world should for a period of two hundred years have been weak or wicked enough to engage wilfully in causing the blood of each other to be shed under the cloak of religion, and merely for worldly motives. But as this must be a matter of opinion, I beg to shew that which has been entertained on the subject by one of the highest authorities against the Trinitarians who have written on the history of Christianity. I allude to Dr. Mosheim, whose words I here give, and I entreat my readers to draw their own inferences from them.

Volume I. page 419: "After the death of Con-

stantine the Great, one of his sons, Constantius, who in the division of the empire became ruler of the East, was warmly attached to the Arian party, whose principles were also zealously adopted by the Empress, and indeed by the whole court. On the other hand, Constantine and Constantius, Emperors of the West, maintained the decrees of the Council of Nice throughout all the provinces between the two contending parties.—Hence arose endless animosities and seditions, treacherous plots, and open acts of injustice and violence between the two contending parties: Council was assembled against Council, and their jarring and contradictory decrees spread perplexity and confusion throughout the Christian world.” Page 420: “His (Gratian’s) zeal for their interest, though fervent and active, was surpassed by that of his successor Theodosius the Great, who raised the secular arm against the Arians with a terrible degree of violence, drove them from their churches, and enacted laws, whose severity exposed them to the greatest calamities.” It is difficult to conceive what other motives than those of mistaken zeal for a particular doctrine could have influenced the mind of an Emperor like Theodosius to such acts of cruelty and violence: but however that may be, it is obvious that if such a mode of interpreting conduct be adopted, it is difficult to say where we are to stop. The devotion even of the Apostles and Martyrs of Christianity may be attributed to a pursuit after power over the minds and respect in the eyes of men, and all dis-

inction of good and evil character be considered as futile and without foundation. With respect to the final success of the Trinitarian party, it appears to me the event naturally to have been expected. For, to the people of those ages, doctrines that resembled the polytheistical belief that till then prevailed, must have been more acceptable than those which were diametrically opposed to such notions. The idea of a God in human form was easy and familiar: Emperors and Empresses had altars raised to them even during their lives, and after death were enrolled as divinities. Perhaps too something may justly be attributed to a certain degree of pride and satisfaction in the idea, that the religion they had begun to profess was dictated immediately by the Deity himself, rather than by any subordinate agency. There had not been among the Heathens any class of mankind to whom they were accustomed to look up with that devotion familiarly entertained by the Jews towards Moses and their Prophets, and they were consequently ready to elevate to a God any being who rose in their estimation above the level of mankind.

The violence and outrages which Roman Catholics and Protestants have experienced from each other, were not of course, as observed by the Reverend Editor, owing in their origin to the adoption of different interpretations respecting the deity of Christ or of the Holy Ghost; but they were the immediate consequences of the different sentiments they have held with respect to the doctrine of an exclusive



power of granting absolution, and leading to eternal life, being vested in St. Peter and his successors. What great mischief has however been produced, and how many lives have from time to time been destroyed, from the difference of sentiments held by the parties with regard to this doctrine, which even the Editor himself does not deem an essential point of religion !

The Editor in p. 114\* argues, as a proof of the importance of the doctrines of the Gospel, that Christ taught them, fully foreseeing that they would be the subject of dispute ; and quotes his saying, that he came not to send peace on the earth, but a sword. The whole of the 10th chap. of Matthew, from which the Editor quotes the passage here alluded to, consists of the instructions delivered by Jesus to the twelve Apostles, when he sent them forth to preach the kingdom of heaven to the lost sheep of the house of Israel ; but has no allusion, that I can perceive, to eternal dissensions amongst those who were already or might afterwards become Christians. That Jesus foresaw, as one of the primary effects of preaching his Gospel, that great dissensions would arise—that he was aware that the great question of confessing him to be the Messiah or not, would be as a sword between a man and his father, the daughter and her mother, and the daughter-in-law and her mother-in-law, is evident. But this seems to me by no means

\* [London edition, page 56.]

to prove that Jesus, as supposed by the Editor, "longed or almost longed" to see a fire kindled in the earth respecting doctrines not essential to the salvation of mankind. Nor would it have been any reason for suppressing the most trivial of his sayings, that priestcraft working on the ignorance and superstition, the bigotry or intolerance of mankind, should have wrested his words to evil purposes.—As observed by the Editor himself, the mischief lay originally in human nature, not in any part of the doctrines of Christ; but as those dissensions are now perpetuated principally by education, a cause essentially distinct from their origin, the case is entirely altered. The corruption of the human heart cannot be totally removed; but the evil effects that spring from human institutions may be avoided, when their real sources are known. After the secret and immediate causes of persecution have passed away, the differences of opinion which have been the declared grounds of hostility are handed down by the teachers of different sects; and, as already repeatedly avowed, it was with the view of evading, not those questions concerning which Jesus spoke and which distinguish his followers from all others, but those which have from time to time been seized upon to excite enmities still existing amongst fellow-christians, that the Compiler confined himself to those Precepts, concerning which all mankind must be of one accord.

As to the question of the Editor, "It can scarcely be unknown to the Compiler, that the very being of

a God has been for numerous ages the subject of dispute among the most learned of his own country; does he account this a sufficient reason for suppressing this doctrine? We know that he does not. Why then should he omit the doctrines of Christ and his Apostles, because men have made them the subject of dispute?" For a direct answer to this question I beg to refer the Reverend Editor to the Appeal of the Compiler, page 27, wherein he will find that he assigns not one, but two circumstances, as concurring to form the motive of his having omitted certain doctrines of Christianity in his selection.—1st, that they are the subject of disputes and contention.—2ndly, that they are not essential to religion.\* It is therefore obvious, that the analogy between the omission of certain dogmas, and that of the being of a God, has been unfairly drawn by the Editor. Admitting that the doctrines of Christianity and the existence of a God are equally liable to disputes, it should be recollected that the former are, in the estimation of the Compiler, not essential to religion; while the latter is acknowledged by him, in common with the professors of every faith, to be the foundation of all religion, as distinctly stated in his Introduction to the selected Precepts of Jesus. Every system of religion adopts the idea of a God, and avows this as its fundamental principle, though they differ from one another in representing the nature

\* [See above, p. 125.]

and attributes of the Deity. The Compiler therefore could have no motive for suppressing the doctrine of the being of a God, though disputed by a few pretended literary men ; and he has consequently never hesitated to inculcate with all his power the idea of one God to the learned and unlearned of his own country, taking care at the same time as much as possible not to enter into particulars as to the real nature, essence, attributes, person, or substance of the Godhead, those being points above his comprehension, and liable to interminable disputes. The Reverend Editor thus expresses his surprise at the conduct of the Compiler, in omitting in his selection the miraculous relations of the Gospel :—" We cannot but wonder that his miracles should not have found greater favour in the eyes of the Compiler of this selection, while the amazing weight which Jesus himself attached to them could scarcely have escaped his notice : " and in order to prove the importance of the miracles ascribed to Jesus, the Editor quotes three instances, in the first of which Jesus referred John the Baptist to his wonderful miracles ; in the second, he called the attention of unbelieving Jews to his miraculous works as a proof of his divine mission ; in the third, he recommends Philip the Apostle to the evidence of his miracles. But after a slight attention to the circumstances in which those appeals were made, it appears clearly, that in these and other instances Jesus referred to his miracles those persons only who either *scrupled to believe*, or doubted him

as the promised Messiah, or required of him some sign to confirm their faith. Vide *Matthew*, ch. xi. vers. 2—4: "When John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and said unto him, Art thou he that should come, or do we *look for another* ? Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John those things which ye do hear and see." *John*, ch. x. vers. 37 and 38, Jesus says to those Jews who accused him of blasphemy, "If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But *if I do*, though ye believe not me, *believe the works*." In reply to the request of Philip, who, being discontented with the doctrines Jesus inculcated, said, "Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us;" Jesus answered and said, "Believe me, that I am in the Father and the Father in me, *or else* believe me for the very works' sake." (*John*, ch. xiv. ver. 11,) Jesus even speaks in terms of reproach of those that seek for miracles for their conviction as to his divine mission. *Matthew*, ch. xii. ver. 39: "But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign." Moreover he blesses them, who, without having recourse to the proofs of miracles, profess their belief on him. *John*, ch. xx. ver. 29: "Jesus said unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me thou hast believed; *blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed*."

Under these circumstances, and from the experience that nothing but the sublimity of the Precepts

of Jesus had at first drawn the attention of the Compiler himself towards Christianity, and excited his veneration for the author of this religion, without aid from miraculous relations, he omitted in his compilation the mention of the miracles performed by Jesus, without meaning to express doubts of their authenticity, or intending to slight them by such an omission.

I regret therefore, that the Editor should have suffered any part of his valuable time to be spent in advancing several arguments, in the concluding part of his Review, to establish the truth of the miraculous statements of the New Testament. But as this discussion applies to the evidence of miracles generally, it may be worth considering. Arguments adduced by the Editor amount to this : " If all social, political, mercantile, and judicial transactions be allowed to rest upon testimony ; why should not the validity of Christian miracles be concluded from the testimony of the Apostles and of others, and be relied upon by all the nations of the world ?" The Editor must be well aware, that the enemies to revelation draw a line of distinction on the subject of proofs by testimony, between the current events of nature familiar to the senses of mankind, and within the scope of human exertions ; and extraordinary facts beyond the limits of common experience, and ascribed to a direct interposition of Divine power suspending the usual course of nature. If all assertions were to be indiscriminately admitted as facts, merely because

they are testified by numbers, how can we dispute the truth of those miracles which are said to have been performed by persons esteemed holy amongst natives of this country? The Compiler has never placed the miracles related in the New Testament on a footing with the extravagant tales of his countrymen, but distinctly expressed his persuasion that they (Christian miracles) would be apt at best to carry little weight with those whose imaginations had been accustomed to dwell on narrations much more wonderful, and supported by testimony which they have been taught to regard with a reverence that they cannot be expected all at once to bestow on the Apostles. See Introduction to the Precepts, and Appeal, p. 17.\* The very same line of argument indeed pursued by the Editor would equally avail the Hindoos. Have they not accounts and records handed down to them relating to the wonderful miracles stated to have been performed by their saints; such as Ugustyu, Vushistu, and Gotum; and their gods incarnate, such as Ram, Krishnu, and Nursingh; in presence of their contemporary friends and enemies, the wise and the ignorant, the select and the multitude?—Could not the Hindoos quote in support of their narrated miracles, authorities from the histories of their most inveterate enemies the Jeins, who join the Hindoos entirely in acknowledging the truth and credibility of their miraculous

\* [Present edition, page 115.]

accounts? The only difference which subsists between these two parties on this subject is, that the Hindoos consider the power of performing miracles given to their gods and saints by the Supreme Deity, and the Jeins declare that they performed all those astonishing works by *Asooree Shakti*, or by demoniac power. Moosuhmans on the other hand can produce records written and testified by contemporaries of Mohummud, both friends and enemies, who are represented as eye-witnesses of the miracles ascribed to him; such as his dividing the moon into two parts, and walking in sunshine without casting a shadow. They can assert too, that several of those witnesses suffered the greatest calamities, and some even death, in defence of that religion; some before the attempts of Mohummud at conquest, others after his commencing such attempts, and others after his death. On mature consideration of all those circumstances, the Compiler hopes he may be allowed to remain still of opinion, that the miraculous relations found in the divine writings would be apt at best to carry little weight with them, when imparted to the Hindoos at large in the present state of their minds: but as no other religion can produce any thing that may stand in competition with the Precepts of Jesus, much less that can be pretended to be superior to them, the Compiler deemed it incumbent upon him to introduce these among his countrymen as a Guide to Peace and Happiness.

---



## CHAPTER VI.

*On the Impersonality of the Holy Spirit.  
Miscellaneous Remarks.*

I WILL now inquire into the justness of the conclusion drawn by the Editor in his attempt to prove the Deity of the Holy Ghost, from the circumstance of his name being associated with that of the Father in the rite of Baptism. This subject is incidentally brought forward in the course of the arguments he has adduced respecting the nature of Jesus, where he observes, "It is needless to add that this testimony of Jesus, (the associating of his own name and that of the Holy Ghost with the name of the Father,) is equally decisive respecting the deity of the Holy Ghost." I have hitherto omitted to notice this question among other matters in review, reserving it for the express purpose of a distinct and separate examination. It seems to me in the first place rather singular, that the Reverend Editor, after having filled up many pages with numerous arguments in his endeavour to establish the Godhead of Jesus, should have noticed in so short and abrupt a manner, the question of the Deity of the Holy Ghost, although the Editor equally esteems them both as distinct persons of the Deity. I wonder, in the next place,

how the learned Editor could suppose a mere association of names in a rite to be sufficient to prove the identity of their subjects. I am indeed sorry I cannot, without overlooking a great many scriptural authorities, and defying reason totally, join the Editor in the opinion, that the association of the name of the Holy Spirit with that of the Father of the Universe, in the rite of Baptism, is "decisive" of, or even allusive to the separate personality of the Spirit.

2 *Chronicles*, ch. xx. ver. 20: "Jehoshaphat stood and said, Hear me, O Judah, and ye inhabitants of Jerusalem; Believe in the Lord your God, so shall ye be established; believe his prophets, so shall ye prosper:" wherein the name of the Prophets of God is associated with that of the Deity himself in the profession of belief, which is considered by Christians of all denominations more essential than an external symbol of Christianity. Again, in *Jeremiah*, ch. xxx. ver. 9, "But they shall serve the Lord their God, and David their King, whom I will raise up unto them," the Lord joins his name with that of David in the act of religious service, which is in its strictest sense esteemed due to God alone. Would it not therefore be unscriptural to make an attempt to prove the Deity of the Prophets, or David, under the plea that their names are associated with that of God in religious observances? But we must do so, were we to follow the process of reasoning adopted by the Reverend Editor. The kind of evidence on which the Editor relies in this instance, would be

sides suit admirably the purposes of those who might seek in the sacred Scriptures, grounds for justifying idolatry. Fire worshippers, for instance, insisting on the literal sense of the words, might refer to that text in the 3d chapter of Matthew, repeated in *Luke*, ch. iii. ver. 16, in which it is announced, that Jesus Christ will baptize with the Holy Ghost and with fire. If the association in the rite of Baptism of the names of the Son and Holy Ghost, with that of the Father, proves their divinity; it is clear, that fire also, being associated with the Holy Ghost in the same rite, must likewise be considered as a part of the Godhead.

God is invariably represented in revelation as the main object of belief, receiving worship and prayers that proceed from the heart through the first-born of every creature, the Messiah, ("No man cometh unto the Father but by me," *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 6,) and leading such as worship him in spirit to righteous conduct, and ultimately to salvation, through his guiding influence, which is called the Holy Spirit, ("when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth," *John*, ch. xvi. ver. 13). There is therefore a moral obligation on those who avow the truth of such revelation to profess their belief in God as the sole object of worship; and in the Son, through whom they, as Christians, should offer divine homage; and also in the holy influence of God, from which they should expect direction in the path of righteousness, as the consequence of their sincere

prayer and supplication. For the same reason also, in publicly adopting this religion, it is proper that those who receive it should be baptized in the name of the Father, who is the object of worship ; of the Son, who is the mediator ; and of that influence by which spiritual blessings are conveyed to mankind, designated in the Scriptures as the Comforter, Spirit of truth, or Holy Spirit. As God is declared through his Holy Spirit to have led to righteousness such as sought heartily his will, so he is equally represented to have through his wrath afflicted rebels against his authority, and to have prospered through his infinite mercy those who manifested obedience to him ; as appears from the following passages. *2 Kings*, ch. xxiv. ver. 20 : " For through the *anger* of the Lord it came to pass in Jerusalem, until he had cast them out from his presence." *Psalms* xc. ver. 7 : " For we are consumed by thine *anger*, and by thy *wrath* are we troubled." *Psalms* xxi. ver. 7 : " And through the *mercy* of the Most High he shall not be moved." *Psalms* vi. ver. 4 : " Return, O Lord, deliver my soul : O save me for thy *mercy's* sake." Nor can we legitimately infer the idea of the self-existence or distinct personality of the Holy Ghost, from such metaphorical language as the following : " The Holy Ghost shall teach you," *Luke*, ch. xii. ver. 12. " The Holy Ghost is come upon you," *Acts*, ch. i. ver. 8. " The Comforter, who is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send," *John*, ch. xiv. ver. 26. For we find expressions of a similar nature applied to other attri-

butes of God, personifying them equally with the Holy Spirit. *Psalm* lvii. ver. 3: "God shall send forth his *mercy* and his *truth*." *Ps.* lxxxv. ver. 10: "*Mercy* and *truth* are met together." *Ps.* c. ver. 5: "The Lord is good, his *mercy* is everlasting." *Ps.* xxxiii. ver. 22: "Let thy *mercy*, O Lord, be upon us." *Ps.* xxxvi. ver. 5: "Thy *mercy*, O Lord, is in the heavens." *Ps.* cviii. ver. 4: "For thy *mercy* is great above the heavens." *Ezekiel*, ch. vii. ver. 3: "I will send my *anger* upon thee." *2 Chronicles*, ch. xxiv. ver. 18: "*Wrath* came upon Judah for this trespass."

Were every attribute ascribed to the Deity, which is found personified, to be therefore considered as a distinct personage, it would be difficult to avoid forming a very strange notion of the theology of the Bible. It appears indeed to me impossible to view the Holy Spirit as very God, without coming to ideas respecting the nature of the Deity, little different from some of those most generally and justly condemned as found amongst Polytheists. Take for instance, *Matthew*, ch. i. ver. 11, where it is said, that Mary was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Ver. 20: "That which is conceived in her, is of the Holy Ghost." *Luke*, ch. i. ver. 35: "The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee." In interpreting these passages according to the opinion maintained by the Editor, we should necessarily be drawn to the idea that God came upon Mary, and that the child

which she bore was in reality begotten of him.—Is this idea, I would beg to know, consistent with the perfect nature of the righteous God? Or rather, is not such a notion of the Godhead's having had intercourse with a human female, as horrible as the sentiments entertained by ancient and modern heathens respecting the Deity? On the other hand, if we understand by those passages, merely that the miraculous influence of God came upon Mary, so that, though a virgin, she bore a child, every thing would stand consistent with our belief of the divine power, without shocking our ideas of the purity of the Deity, inculcated alike by reason and revelation. This mode of interpretation is indeed confirmed by the very passage of *Luke* above quoted, "The power of the Highest shall overshadow thee;" plainly and simply declaring, that it was the power of God which gave birth to the child, contrary to the ordinary course of nature. If by the term "Holy Ghost" be meant a third distinct person of the Godhead, equal in power and glory with the Father of all; I am at a loss to know what Trinitarians understand by such expressions as the following. *Matthew*, ch. iii. ver. 11, and *Luke*, ch. iii. ver. 16: "He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire." *Acts*, ch. x. ver. 38: "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power." *Matthew*, ch. xii. ver. 28: "I cast out devils by the Spirit of God." Ver. 31: "All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy against the

Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men." *Luke*, ch. iv. ver. 1: "And Jesus, being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan." If the term "Holy Ghost" be synonymous with the third person of the Godhead, and "Christ" with the second person, the foregoing passages may be read as follows: "He, the second person, shall baptize you with the third person of the Godhead, and with fire." "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth (the second person of the Godhead), with the third person of the Godhead, and with power." "I (the second person of the Godhead), cast out devils by the third person of the Godhead." "All manner of sin and blasphemy, even against the first and second persons of the Godhead, shall be forgiven unto men; but blasphemy against the third person of the Godhead shall not be forgiven unto men." "Jesus (the second person of the Godhead), being full of the third person of the Godhead, returned from Jordan." But little reflection is, I should suppose, necessary to enable any one to perceive the inconsistency of such paraphrases as the foregoing, and the reasonableness of adopting the usual mode of scriptural interpretation of the original texts, according to which the foregoing passages may be understood as follows: "He shall baptize you with the spirit of truth and purity." "God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with his holy influence and power." "I cast out devils by the influence of God." "All manner of sin and blasphemy even against the Christ, the first-born of every creature,

shall be forgiven to men ; but blasphemy against the power of God shall not be forgiven unto men." " Jesus being full of the influence of God, returned from Jordan." Still more dangerous to true religion would it be to interpret, according to the Trinitarian mode, the passages which describe the descent of the Holy Ghost upon Jesus on the occasion of his baptism. *Luke*, ch. iii. ver. 22: " And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him." For if we believe that the Spirit, in the form of a dove, or in any other *bodily shape*, was really the third person of the Godhead, how can we justly charge with absurdity the Hindoo legends of the Divinity having the form of a fish or of any other animal?

It ought to be remarked, with respect to the text above quoted, denouncing eternal wrath on those who blaspheme against the Holy Ghost, that the occasion on which the term was made use of by Christ was the accusation of the Jews, that his miracles were the effects of an influence of a nature directly opposite to that of God, namely, the power of Beelzebub, the Prince of Devils. The Jews alleged that he was possessed of an unclean or diabolical spirit. (" Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit," *Mark*, ch. iii. ver. 30. " They said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub, the prince of devils," *Matthew*, ch. xii, ver. 24.) Jesus affirms, that the Spirit which enabled him to do those wonderful works was a holy



Spirit ; and that whatever language they might hold with respect to himself, blasphemy against that power by which he did those miracles would not be forgiven. " All manner of sins and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men : but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him : but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in the world to come."

Were the words "all manner of blasphemy," in the passage in question, received as including blasphemy against the Father, the term must be thus understood : " All manner of blasphemy against man and the Father, and even blasphemy against the Son, shall be forgiven ; but blasphemy against the Holy Ghost must not be forgiven : " and consequently the interpretation would amount to an admission of the superiority of the Son and the Holy Ghost to the Father, an opinion which no sect of Christians has hitherto formed. In the above-quoted passage, therefore, the exception of the Holy Ghost must exclude blasphemy against the Father, and the whole should be thus interpreted :—All manner of blasphemy against men and angels, even against the first-born of every creature, shall be forgiven ; but blasphemy against the power of God, by which Jesus declared himself to have cast out devils, shall not be forgiven. For further illustration I quote

here the whole passage of *Matthew*, ch. xii. vers. 24—37: “ But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. Or else how can one enter into a strong man’s house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house. He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by his fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart

the mouth speaketh. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned." *Mark*, ch. iii. vers. 29, 30 : "But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation: because they said, He hath an unclean spirit."

Is it not evident from the above authority of Jesus himself, that the term "Holy Ghost" is synonymous to the prevailing influence of God? And had not the power by which Jesus performed his miracles the same origin, and was it not of the same nature as that by which the children of Israel performed theirs? "If I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges." It may not be without use to notice here, that frequent instances are related in the Scriptures of the influence of the Spirit of God, in leading righteous men to truth, before Jesus had commenced the performance of his divine commission, and even before he had appeared in this world; in the same manner as it afterwards operated in guiding his true followers to the way of God, subsequent to his ascent to heaven, in consequence of his repeated intercession with the Father. This will

fully appear from the following passages, *Luke*, ch. i. ver. 15: "And he (John the Baptist) shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb." Ver. 41: "And it came to pass, that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elizabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost." Ver. 67: "And his (John's) father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied," &c. Ch. ii. vers. 25, 26: "And, behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and the same man was just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel; and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple." *Mark*, ch. xii. ver. 36: "David himself said by the Holy Ghost, The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool." The Evangelist Matthew employs a similar expression, ch. xxii. ver. 43: "How then doth David in spirit call him Lord?" *Luke*, ch. iv. ver. 1: "And Jesus, being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness." It must not, therefore, be supposed, that the manifestation of this holy attribute of God is peculiar to the Christian dispensation. We find in the Scriptures the term "God" applied figuratively in a finite sense to Christ, and to some other superiors, as I have already noticed in page 169: a circumstance

which may possibly have tended to confirm such as are rendered from their early impressions partial to the doctrine of the Trinity, in their prepossessed notions of the deity of Jesus. But with respect to the Holy Ghost, I must confess my inability to find a single passage in the whole Scriptures, in which the Spirit is addressed as God, or as a person of God, so as to afford to believers of the Trinity an excuse for their profession of the Godhead of the Holy Ghost. The only authorities they quote to this effect that I have met with are as follow: *Acts* ch. v. vers. 3, 4: "Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost? Thou hast not lied unto men, but unto God." From which they conclude, He that lieth to the Holy Ghost, lieth to God. *John*, ch. xv. ver. 26: "But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, who proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me." As to the first of these texts, I need only remark, that any sin or blasphemy against one of the attributes of God is of course reckoned a sin or blasphemy against God himself. But this admission amounts neither to a recognition of the self-existence of the attribute, nor of its identity with God. With respect to the mission of the Spirit of truth as a proof of its being a separate existence, and not merely an expression for the influence of God, the passage in question if so taken will thus run: "But when God is come, whom I (God) will send unto you from God, even God who

proceedeth from God, &c.” Can there be an idea more polytheistical than what flows from these words? Yet those that maintain this interpretation, express their detestation of Polytheism. If with a view to soften the unreasonableness of this interpretation they think themselves justified in having recourse to the term “mystery,” they cannot without injustice accuse Hindoos, the believers of numerous Gods under one Godhead, of absurdity, when they plead mystery in defence of their Polytheism; for under the plea of mystery every appearance of unreasonableness may be easily removed.

I find to my great surprise, that the plural form of expression in the 26th verse of the first chapter of Genesis, “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness,” has been quoted by some divines as tending to prove the doctrine of the Deity of the Holy Ghost, and that of the Son with the Deity of the Father of the universe, commonly called the doctrine of the Trinity. It could scarcely be believed, if the fact were not too notorious, that such eminent scholars as some of those divines undoubtedly were, could be liable to such a mistake, as to rely on this verse as a ground of argument in support of the Trinity. It shews how easily prejudice in favour of an already acquired opinion gets the better of learning, and how successfully it darkens the sphere of truth. Were we even to disregard totally the idiom of the Hebrew, Arabic, and of almost all Asiatic languages, in which the plural

number is often used for the singular, to express the respect due to the person denoted by the noun ; and to understand the term "our image" "and our likeness," found in the verse as conveying a plural meaning, the quotation would still by no means answer their purpose ; for the verse in question would in that case imply a plurality of Gods, without determining whether their number was three or three hundred, and of course without specifying their persons.—No middle point in the unlimited series of number being determined, it would be almost necessary for the purpose of obtaining some fixed number, as implied by those terms, to adopt either two, the lowest degree of plurality in the first personal pronoun both in Hebrew and Arabic, or to take the highest number of Gods with which human imagination has peopled the heavens. In the former case the verse cited might countenance the doctrine of the duality of the Godhead entertained by Zirdusht and his followers, representing the God of goodness, and the God of evil, to have jointly created man, composed of a mixed nature of good and evil propensities ; in the latter it would be consistent with the Hindoo system of religion ; but there is nothing in the words that can be with any justice construed as pointing to Trinity. These are not the only difficulties attending the interpretation of those terms :—if they should be viewed in any other than a singular sense, they would involve contradiction with the very next verse : "So God created man in his own image;" in which the

singular number is distinctly used; and in *Deut.* ch. iv. ver. 4, "The Lord our God is one Lord;" and also with the spirit of the whole of the Old Testament.

To those who are tolerably versed in Hebrew and Arabic, (which is only a refined Hebrew,) it is a well known fact, that in the Jewish and Mohummudan Scriptures, as well as in common discourse, the plural form is often used in a singular sense when the superiority of the subject of discourse is intended to be kept in view: this is sufficiently apparent from the following quotations taken both from the Old Testament in Hebrew, and from the *Qoran*. *Exodus*, ch. xxi. ver. 4, In the original Hebrew Scripture אם מרבי יתן לו אשה "If his masters (meaning his master) have given him a wife." Verse 6, Hebrew, אם מרבי יבא אליו אליו "Then his masters (that is, his master) shall bring him unto the judges." Verse 29th, אם שור נגח חמא פסול שבעה ימים בנפשו "But if the ox were wont to push with his horn in time past, and it has been testified to his owners," (that is, to his owner).—*Isaiah*, ch. vi. ver. 8, Hebrew, מי יקח עמנו "To whom shall I send? and who will go for us?" (that is, for me).

So also in the *Qoran*, نحن اقرب من جبل الزرير "We are (meaning I am) nearer than the jugular vein," انا جليقنا بقدر "Surely we (meaning I) created every thing in proportion." In these two texts of the *Qoran*, God is represented to have spoken



in the plural number, although Mohummud cannot be supposed to have employed a mode of expression which he could have supposed capable of being considered favourable to the Trinity.

But what are we to think of such reasoning as that which finds a confirmation of the doctrine of the Trinity in the thrice repeated term "holy," in verse 3d, chapter vith of *Isaiah*? Following this mode of argument, the repetitions of the term "Eli, Eli," or "My God, my God," by Jesus in his human nature, in *Matthew*, ch. xxvii. ver. 46, equally establishes the duality of the Godhead. So also the holy name of the Supreme Deity being composed of four letters, in the Hebrew *יהוה*; in Greek *ἰησοῦς*; in Latin *Deus*; in Arabic *الله*; and in Sanscrit *देव*, clearly denotes the quadrality of the Godhead!!! But these and all similar modes of argument that have been resorted to, are worthy of notice only as they serve to exhibit the extraordinary force of prejudice and superstition.

The most extraordinary circumstance is, that some should quote in support of the Trinity, the following sentence: "For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these three are one;" representing it as the 7th verse, chap. vth, of the first epistle of John. This is supposed to have been at first composed as a paraphrase upon what stands as verse 8th of the same chapter, ("and there are three that bear witness in earth, the Spirit, and the water, and the blood; and

these three agree in one,") and met with approbation. It was however for a length of time known only in oral circulation; but was afterwards placed in the margin of some editions, and at last introduced into the text, most probably in the fifteenth century, as an original verse. From that time it has been the common practice to insert this verse amongst those which are collected in support of the Trinitarian doctrine. It may have served in this way to confirm and strengthen prejudice, though few biblical critics ever attached the smallest value to it either way. This interpretation is so modern and so obvious, that several Trinitarian Editors and Commentators of the Bible, such as Griesbach and Michaelis, (who never allowed their zeal for their sect to overcome the prudence and candour with which they were endowed,) have omitted to insert it in their late works on the New Testament; knowing perhaps that such an interpolation, so far from strengthening the doctrine they maintain, has excited great doubts as to the accuracy of other passages generally relied upon for its support.

We have already, I trust, seen distinctly that none of the lessons taught by Christ to his disciples teach us to believe in him as God; but as most Trinitarian authors assert that this doctrine was fully revealed by his Apostles speaking under the inspiration of the Holy Ghost, it may be worth while to examine whether it be included by them amongst the doctrines of the Christian religion. This question may

be immediately determined by referring to the history of the Acts of the Apostles ; for if the doctrine of the Trinity had been considered by them as an essential part of what they were commanded to teach, we should certainly find it insisted upon in the discourses they addressed to their converts. But we shall look in vain for any expression amongst those reported by Luke, that indicates the profession of such a belief by the Apostles themselves ; far less that they exacted an acknowledgment of its truth, from those whom they admitted by the rite of Baptism into the faith of Christianity.

*Acts*, ch. ii. ver. 22 : “ Ye men of Israel, hear these words ; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know ;” 32, “ This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.” 36, “ Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made that same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ.” Ch. iii. 22 and 23 : “ For Moses truly said unto the Fathers, a Prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me ; him shall ye hear in all things, whatsoever he shall say unto you. And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the people.” Ch. iv. ver. 12 : “ Neither is there salvation in any other ; for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must

be saved." Vers. 26 and 27 : "The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his Christ. For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed," &c. Ch. v. ver. 31 : "Him has God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins." Ch. vii. ver. 56 : "And said, behold, I see the heavens open, and the Son of man standing on the right-hand of God." Ch. viii. vers. 37 and 38 : "And Philip said, If thou believest with all thine heart, thou mayest. And he answered and said, I believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God. And he commanded the chariot to stand still : and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch ; and he baptized him." Ch. x. ver. 38 : "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power." Ver. 42 : "And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to testify that it is he who was ordained of God to be the Judge of quick and dead." Ch. xiii. ver. 38 : "Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins." Ch. xvii. ver. 3 : "Opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead ; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ."

Thus we find the Apostles never hesitated to hazard their lives by declaring before the Jews that their master was a Prophet, the expected Messiah, the

Son of the living God; which was equally offensive to their countrymen, as if they had called him God himself; yet in none of the Sermons do we ever find them representing him as the true God. In the same manner Jesus himself never assumed that character to himself, although he repeatedly avowed that he was the Messiah, the Son of God, whereby he knew that according to their law he would draw the penalty of death upon himself. As to the nature of those doctrines of Christianity deemed essential in the earliest times, I shall content myself with making a few extracts from the Ecclesiastical History of Mosheim, a celebrated author among Trinitarians, which will prove that the doctrine of the Trinity, so zealously maintained as fundamental by the generality of modern Christians, made not its appearance as an essential, or even secondary article of Christian faith, until the commencement of the fourth century; and then it was introduced after long and violent discussions by the majority of an assembly, who were supported by the authority of a monarch. Mosheim, Vol. I. p. 100: "Nor in this first century was the distinction made between Christians of a more or less perfect order which took place afterwards: whoever acknowledged Christ as the Saviour of mankind, and made solemn profession of his confidence in him, was immediately baptized, and received into the Church." P. 411: "Soon after its commencement, even in the year 317, a new contention arose in Egypt upon a subject of much higher importance,

and with consequences of a yet more pernicious nature ; the subject of this fatal controversy, which kindled such deplorable division throughout the Christian world, was the doctrine of three persons of the Godhead ; a doctrine which in the three preceding centuries had happily escaped the vain curiosity of human researches, and been left undefined and undetermined by any particular set of ideas. The Church indeed had frequently decided against the Sabellians and others, that there was a real difference between the Father and the Son, and that the Holy Ghost was distinct from them both ; or, as we commonly speak, that three distinct persons exist in the Deity ; but the mutual relation of these persons to each other, and the nature of the distinction that subsists between them, are matters that hitherto were neither disputed nor explained, with respect to which the Church had consequently observed a profound silence :—nothing was declared to the faith of Christians in this matter, nor were there any modes of expression prescribed as requisite to be used in speaking of the mystery. Hence it happened, that the Christian doctors entertained different sentiments upon this subject without giving the least offence, and discoursed variously concerning the distinction between Father, Son, and the Holy Ghost, each one following his respective opinion with the utmost liberty.” On this quotation I beg leave to remark, that if, in the first and purest ages of Christianity, the followers of Christ entertained such different opinions

on the subject of the distinction between Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, without incurring the charge of heresy and heterodoxy, and without even breaking the tie of Christian affection towards each other, it is a melancholy contrast that the same freedom of opinion on this subject is not now allowed, nor the same mutual forbearance maintained amongst those who call themselves Christians. Mosheim, p. 412: "In an assembly of Presbyters of Alexandria, the Bishop of that city, whose name was Alexander, expressed his sentiments on this head with a high degree of freedom and confidence, and maintained among other things, that the Son was not only of the same eminence and dignity, but also of the same essence with the Father: this assertion was opposed by Arius, one of the presbyters, a man of a subtile turn, and remarkable for his eloquence." Page 414: "The Emperor Constantine, looking upon the subject of this controversy as a matter of small importance, and as little connected with the fundamental and essential doctrines of religion, contented himself at first with addressing a letter to the contending parties, in which he admonished them to put an end to their disputes; but when the Prince saw that his admonitions were without effect, and that troubles and commotions, which the passions of men too often mingle with religious disputes, were spreading and increasing daily throughout the empire, he assembled at length, in the year 325, the famous Council of Nice in Bithynia, wherein the deputies of the Church

Universal were summoned to put an end to this controversy. In this general council, after many keen debates and violent efforts of the two parties, the doctrine of Arius was condemned; Christ declared consubstantial or of the same essence with the Father; the vanquished Presbyter banished among the Illyrians, and his followers compelled to give their assent to the creed or confession of faith which was composed by this council." It must not escape the notice of my readers, that so late as the year 314, the doctrine of the Son being of the same nature with the Father, was supposed to be a matter of small importance, and little connected with the fundamental and essential doctrines of religion.

The reason for the majority being in favour of the three persons of the Godhead at the Council of Nice, may be easily accounted for, as I noticed before. More than nine-tenths of the Christians of that age, including the emperor and princes, were Gentile converts, to whom the idea of a plurality of Gods was most familiar and acceptable, and to whose reason as well as practice the worship of a deity in the human shape was perfectly consonant, as appears from the following quotation, as well as from the Roman and Grecian histories. Mosheim, [Vol. I.] p. 25 : "The deities of almost all nations were either ancient heroes renowned for noble exploits and worthy deeds, or kings and generals who had founded empires, or women become illustrious by remarkable actions or useful inventions : the merit of these distinguished



and eminent persons, contemplated by their posterity with an enthusiastic gratitude, was the reason of their being exalted to celestial honours." We find also in the Acts of the Apostles, Paul declared to be God by the people of Melita, and both Paul and Barnabas regarded as gods by the inhabitants of Lystra; and the Saviour was ranked in the number of false gods even by professed Heathens. *Acts*, ch. xxviii. ver. 6: "Howbeit they looked when he (Paul) should have swollen or fallen down dead suddenly; but after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they changed their minds, and said he was a God." *Acts*, ch. xiv. ver. 11: "The gods are come down to us in the likeness of men." Mosheim, [Vol. I.] p. 65: "Many who were not willing to adopt the whole of the doctrines of Christianity, were nevertheless, as appears from undoubted records, so struck with the account of his life and actions, and so charmed with the sublime purity of his precepts, that they numbered him (Jesus) among the greatest heroes, nay, even among the gods themselves." Page 66: "So illustrious was the fame of Christ's power grown after his resurrection from the dead, and the miraculous gifts shed from on high upon his apostles, that the Emperor Tiberius is said to have proposed his being enrolled among the gods of Rome, which the opposition of the senate hindered from taking effect." If some of the Heathens from the nature of their superstitions could rank Jesus among their false gods, it is no wonder if others,

when nominally converted to Christianity, should have placed him on an equality with the true God, and should have passed a decree, constituting him one of the persons of the Godhead. These facts coincide entirely with my own firm persuasion of the impossibility, that a doctrine so inconsistent with the evidence of the senses as that of three persons in one being, should ever gain the sincere assent of any one, into whose mind it has not been instilled in early education. Early impressions alone can induce a Christian to believe that three are one, and one is three ; just as by the same means a Hindoo is made to believe that millions are one, and one is millions ; and to imagine that an inanimate idol is a living substance, and capable of assuming various forms. As I have sought to attain the truths of Christianity from the words of the author of this religion, and from the undisputed instructions of his holy apostles, and not from a parent or tutor, I cannot help refusing my assent to any doctrine which I do not find scriptural.

Before concluding, I beg to revert to one or two arguments respecting the nature of Jesus Christ, which have been already partly touched upon. It is maintained that his nature was double, being divine as Son of God, and human as Son of man—that in the former capacity he performed miracles and exercised authority over the wind and the sea, and as man was subject to and experienced human feelings, joy and sorrow, pleasure and pain. Is it possi-

ble to consider a being in the human shape, acting daily in a manner required by the nature of the human race, as the invisible God, above mortality and all the feelings of mortal beings, from a mere figurative application of the terms "Son of God," or "God," to him, and from the circumstance of his performing wonderful works contrary to the usual course of nature? If so, what can prevent one from esteeming Moses and others, as possessed of both divine and human nature? since Moses likewise is called God distinctly, (*Exodus*, ch. vii. ver. 1: "I have made thee a God to Pharaoh;") and he is also called man, ("wherewith Moses, the man of God, blessed Israel," *Deut.* ch. xxxiii. ver. 1); and consequently it may be alleged, that in his divine capacity Moses performed miracles, and commanded the heavens and the earth, ("Give ear, O ye heavens, and I will speak; and hear, O earth, the words of my mouth," *Deut.* ch. xxxii. ver. 1; "For it (the word of Moses) is not a vain thing for you, because *it is your life*," ver. 47;) and that in his human capacity he suffered death and other miseries. Neither Jesus nor Moses ever declared, "I say so, and perform this as God; and I say so, and perform that as man." If we give so great a latitude to the modes of reasoning employed to justify the idea of one being possessed of two sorts of consciousness, as God and man; two sorts of minds, divine and human; and two sets of souls, eternal and perishable; then we shall not only be at a loss to know

what is rational and what is absurd, but shall find our senses and experience of little or no use to us. The mode of interpreting the Scriptures which is universally adopted, is this, that when two terms seemingly contradictory are applied to one person, then that which is most consistent with reason and with the context should be taken in a literal, and the other in a figurative sense. Thus God is declared to be immaterial, and yet to have hands, eyes, &c. The latter expressions taken literally, being inconsistent with reason, and with other passages of the Scriptures, are understood as metaphorically implying his power and knowledge, while the former is interpreted in its strict and literal sense: in like manner the term "Lord God," &c. applied to any other than the Supreme Being, must be figuratively understood. Were any one, in defiance of this general mode of interpretation, to insist that the term "God," applied to Jesus, should be taken in its literal sense, and that consequently Jesus should be actually considered God in the human shape, he would not only acknowledge the same intimate connexion of matter with God, that exists between matter and the human soul, but also would necessarily justify the application of such phrases as "Mother of God" to the Virgin Mary, and "Brother of God" to James and others, which are highly derogatory to the character of the Supreme Author of the universe; and it is the use of phrases similar to these which has rendered the religion of the Hindoos so grossly

absurd and contemptible. To admit that all things, whether possible or impossible to our understanding, are possible for God, is certainly favourable to the idea of a mixed nature of God and man ; but at the same time would be highly detrimental both to religion and society ; for all sorts of positions and tales, however impossible they may be, might in that case be advanced and supported on the same plea.

I now conclude my reply with noticing in a brief manner the modes of illustration that Trinitarians adopt both in conversation and in writing in support of the unity of the Godhead, in consistency with the distinction of three persons. 1st, That as the soul, will, and perception, though they are three things, yet are in fact one, so God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, though distinct persons, are to be esteemed as one. Admitting for a moment the propriety of this analogy, it serves to destroy totally their position, as to the three existences of the Godhead being distinct substances ; for, according to the established system of theology, the soul is believed to be the substance, and will and perceptions its properties, which have no distinct existence ; in the same manner as weight and locality are the properties of matter, without having existence as separate substances. If this analogy then were to hold good, the Father would be acknowledged as a separate existence like the soul, but the Son and the Holy Spirit must be considered his attributes, as will and perception are of the soul : a doctrine which re-

seembles that of the heretic Sabellius and the early Egyptian Christians.

It is therefore necessary, that, in endeavouring to prove the reasonableness of the idea respecting the unity of three distinct substances of the Godhead, from comparison between them, and the soul and its will and perception, they should establish first that the soul, will, and perception, are three substances, and that they are at the same time one; and then should draw such an analogy, shewing the possibility of the position which they assume.

2ndly, That as notwithstanding the distinct existence of the sun, his rays of light and his rays of heat, they are considered as one; so God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, though separate substances, are one. Were we to admit the separate existence of heat, a point still disputed amongst philosophers, it would serve as an analogy so far as these three distinct substances, though different in nature, are connected together; but by no means would answer the purpose of illustrating their position, that these distinct persons are one in nature and essence: for the sun is acknowledged to be a compact body; rays of light are fluid substances subject to absorption, and frequently found emanating from other bodies as well as the sun; and heat, an existence of which the most remarkable property is its power of expanding other substances, is frequently unaccompanied by the rays of the sun. But it is universally acknowledged, that whatever argument

tends to prove a distinction between substances, must necessarily overturn their unity in essence and existence; and therefore the unity in nature and essence which they assert to exist in the three persons of the Godhead not being found in the sun, light, and heat, the analogy attempted to be drawn must be abandoned. Again, it is advanced, that as a single substance possesses various qualities, and consequently is viewed differently; so the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, are in fact one God; yet the Deity in his capacity of Creator of the world is called the Father, and in his capacity of Mediator is termed the Son, in which he is generally supposed inferior to the Father; and in his office of sanctification is named the Holy Ghost, in which he is deemed inferior to both. I know not whether to consider such an argument as reasoning, or as a mockery of reason; since it justifies us in believing, that one and the same being in one of his capacities is superior to himself, and again in reference to another quality is inferior to himself; that he is in one case his own beloved Son, and then in another capacity is at the disposal of himself according to the entreaty of his Son. This mode of arguing after all serves to deny the Trinity, which represents the Godhead as consisting of three distinct persons, and not as one person possessing different attributes, which it is the object of Trinitarians to prove. They allege the united state of the soul and the body as analogous to the union of the Father and Son; but no one who believes in

the separate existence of the soul, can for a moment suppose it to be of the same essence as the body : so that unless they admit the immateriality of the Father alone, and assert the materiality of the Son in his pre-existent state, this illustration also must be set aside.

Some allege, that as the Son of Man designates human nature, so the Son of God expresses the nature of God. Were we to admit the term "God" as a common noun, and not a proper name, and Godhead as a genus like mankind, &c., and that Jesus was actually begotten of the Deity, this mode of reasoning would stand good ; but Godhead must in this case be brought to a level with other genera, capable of performing animal functions, &c.

Some represent God as a compound substance, consisting of three parts, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit, a representation in support of which they can offer no scriptural authority. I would however wish to know, whether these parts (Father, Son and Spirit) are of the same nature and existence, or each possessed of a different nature or essence. In the former case, there would be a total impossibility of composition ; for composition absolutely requires articles or parts of different identity and essence ; nothing being capable of composition with itself. Besides, the idea of such a compound substance is inconsistent with that distinct personality of Father, Son, and Spirit, which they maintain.—In the latter case, (that is, the Father, the Son, and the Holy



Spirit, being of different natures,) a composition of these three parts is not impossible; but it destroys the opinion which they entertain respecting the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Spirit, being of the same nature and essence, and of course implies, that the Godhead is liable to divisibility.

The argument so adduced by them would include in reality a denial of the epithet God to each part of the Godhead; for no portion of an existence, either ideal or perceptible in a true sense, can be called the existence itself; as it is one of the first axioms of abstract truth, that a part is less than the whole: but we find in the Scriptures the Father constantly called God in the strict and full signification of the term. *John*, ch. xvii. ver. 3: "This is life eternal, that they may know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent." *1 Cor.* ch. xv. ver. 24: "Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father." *1 Cor.* ch. viii. ver. 6: "To us there is but one God, the Father." *Ephesians*, ch. iv. vers. 5, 6: "One Lord, one faith, one baptism; one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all."

Another argument which has great weight with that sect is, that unless Jesus is God and man, he cannot be considered as qualified to perform the office of mediator between God and man; because it is only by this compound character that he intercedes for guilty creatures with their offended God.—

This mode of reasoning is most evidently opposed to common sense, as well as to the Scriptures ; though their zeal in support of the Trinity has not permitted them to see it. I say, opposed to common sense ; because we observe, that when any one feels angry with and inclined to punish one of a herd of cattle which may have trespassed on his grounds, or when a rider wishes to chastise his horse on account of its viciousness, it is his friend or neighbour generally who intercedes in its behalf, and is successful in procuring mercy to the offending animal, in his simple nature, without assuming in addition that of the creature in whose behalf he intercedes.—I say, opposed to scripture ; because we find in the sacred writings, that Abraham, Moses, and other Prophets, stood mediators and interceded successfully in behalf of an offending people with their offended God ; but none of them possessed the double nature of God and man. *Numb.* ch. xi. vers. 1, 2: “When the people complained it displeased the Lord ; and the Lord heard it, and his anger was kindled, and the fire of the Lord burnt among them, and consumed them that were in the uttermost parts of the camp. And the people cried unto Moses ; and when Moses prayed unto the Lord, the fire was quenched.” Ch. xiv. vers. 19, 20, Moses prayed to the Lord, “Pardon, I beseech thee, the iniquity of this people, according unto the greatness of thy mercy, and as thou hast forgiven this people, from Egypt even until now. And the Lord said, I have pardoned them according

to thy word." Ch. xxi. ver. 7: "Therefore the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the Lord, and against thee: pray unto the Lord that he take away the serpents from us: and Moses prayed for the people." *Exod.* ch. xxxii. ver. 30: "And it came to pass on the morrow, that Moses said unto the people, Ye have sinned a great sin, and now I will go up unto the Lord, peradventure I shall make an atonement for your sins." *Gen.* ch. xviii. ver. 32: "And he (Abraham) said, O let not the Lord be angry, and I will speak yet but this once—Peradventure ten shall be found there. And he said, I will not destroy it for ten's sake." I find several others performing the office of mediator and intercessor in common with Jesus, as I noticed before; and indeed this seems to have been an office common to all Prophets: but none of them is supposed to have been clothed with Godhead and manhood in union. *Jeremiah*, ch. xxvii. ver. 18: "But if they be Prophets, and if the word of the Lord be with them, let them now make intercession to the Lord of Hosts," &c. *Deuter.* ch. v. ver. 5: "I (Moses) stood between the Lord and you at that time, to shew you the word of the Lord." I regret very much that a sect generally so enlightened should on the one hand have supposed the divine and human natures to be so diametrically opposed to each other, that it is morally impossible for God even to accept intercession from a mere human being in behalf of the human race, and on

the other hand should have advanced that the Deity joined to his own nature that of man, and was made flesh, possessing all the members and exercising all the functions of man—propositions which are morally inconsistent with each other.

To avoid the supposed dishonour attached to the appointment of a mediator less than divine, the Deity is declared by them to have assumed the human shape, and to have subjected himself to the feelings and inclinations natural to the human species ; which is not only inconsistent with the immutable nature of God, but highly derogatory to the honour and glory which we are taught to ascribe to him.

Other arguments of the same nature are frequently advanced, but they are all together much fewer in number, and far less convincing, than those which are commonly brought forward by Hindoos to support their Polytheism. Since, then, in evincing the truth and excellence of the Precepts of Jesus, there is no need of the aid of metaphysical arguments, and since as a last resource they do not depend for their support on the ground of mystery, the Compiler has in the discharge of his duty towards his countrymen, properly introduced them as a Guide to Peace and Happiness.



## APPENDIX.



## No. I.

*On the Quotations from the Old Testament contained in the New.*

It cannot have escaped the notice of attentive readers of the Scriptures, that the bare quotations in the New Testament from the Old, when unaccompanied with their respective contexts, are liable to be misunderstood. Those who are not well versed in the sacred writings, finding in those references such phrases as apparently corroborate their already acquired opinions, not only lay stress upon them, in support of the sentiments generally adopted, but even lead others very often, though unintentionally, into great errors.

Thus *Matthew* ii. 15 : " Out of Egypt have I called my Son." The Evangelist refers to chapter xi. verse 1 of *Hosea* ; which, though really applied to Israel, represented there as the Son of God, is used by the apostle in reference to the Saviour, in consideration of a near resemblance between their circumstances in this instance :— both Israel and Jesus were carried into Egypt and recalled from thence, and both were denominated in the Scriptures the " Son of God." The passage of *Hosea* thus runs from chapter xi. vers. 1st to the 3d : " When Israel was a child, then I loved him, and called my Son out of Egypt. As they called them, so they went from them : they sacri-

ficed unto Baalim, and burnt incense to graven images. I taught Ephraim also to go, taking them by their arms; but they knew not that I healed them." In which Israel, who is represented as a child of God, is declared to have sacrificed to Baalim, and to have burnt incense to graven images—circumstances which cannot justly be ascribed to the Saviour.

With a view, therefore, to remove the possibility of such errors, and to convince my readers that all the references in the New Testament with their contexts manifest the unity of God and natural inferiority of the Messiah to the Father of the universe, I have endeavoured to arrange them methodically, beginning with such quotations as were made by Jesus himself, agreeably to the proposal of the Reverend Editor.

*Quotations by Jesus himself exactly agreeing with the Hebrew.*

*Matthew* iv. 4, "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God:" the same in *Luke* iv. 4, compared with *Deut.* viii. 3, "And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know, that man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live."

*Matthew* iv. 7, "Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God"—compared with *Deut.* vi. 16, 17, "Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God, as ye tempted him in Massah. Ye shall diligently keep the commandments of the Lord your God, and his testimonies, and his statutes, which he hath commanded thee."

*Matthew ix. 13*, "But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice"—compared with *Hosea vi. 5, 6*, "Therefore have I hewed them by the prophets; I have slain them by the words of my mouth: and thy judgments are as the light that goeth forth. For I desired mercy, and not sacrifice; and the knowledge of God more than burnt offerings."

*Matthew xix. 19, xxii. 39*, "Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself"—compared with *Exodus xx. 12*, "Honour thy father and mother, that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee"—and *Leviticus xix. 18*, "Thou shalt not avenge nor bear any grudge against the children of thy people; but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the Lord."

*Matthew xxi. 42*, "The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes;"—the same in *Mark xii. 10*, *Luke xx. 17*, compared with *Psalms cxviii. 22, 23*, "I (says David) will praise thee; for thou hast heard me, and art become my salvation. The stone which the builders refused is become the head-stone of the corner. This is the Lord's doing; it is marvellous in our eyes." To decide whether this passage is principally applied to David, and in the way of accommodation to Jesus, or originally to Jesus himself, is entirely left to the discretion of my readers; but it is evident in either case, that it is God that has raised the stone so rejected.

*Matthew xxii. 44*, "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool:" the same in *Mark xii. 36*, *Luke xx. 42*, compared with *Psalms cx. 1, 2*, "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit

thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool. The Lord shall send the rod of thy strength out of Zion: rule thou in the midst of thine enemies." This passage is simply applied to the Messiah, manifesting that the victory gained by him over his enemies was entirely owing to the influence of God.

*John* x. 35, "Ye are gods"—compared with *Psalms* lxxxii. 1, 6, 7, "God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the gods. I have said, Ye are gods, and all of you are children of the Most High: but ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes;" wherein Jesus shews from this quotation, that the term God is figuratively applicable in the Scriptures to creatures of a superior nature.

*Quotations made by Jesus himself, nearly agreeing with the Hebrew.*

*Matthew* iv. 10, "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only thou shalt serve"—compared with *Deut.* vi. 13, "Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God, and serve him, and shalt swear by his name."

*Matthew* xiii. 14, "By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive"—compared with *Isaiah* vi. 9, and its context, "I heard the voice of the Lord, saying, Whom shall I send, and who will go for us? Then said I, (Isaiah,) Here am I, send me. And he said, Go and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not." This censure has original reference to the conduct of the people to whom Isaiah was sent, but it is applied by Jesus in an accommodated sense to that of the Jews of his time.



*Matthew* xix. 5, "For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh"—compared with *Genesis* ii. 23, "And Adam said, This is now bone of my bone, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called woman; because she was taken out of man. Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife; and they shall be one flesh."

*Matthew* xix. 18, 19, "Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself"—compared with *Exodus* xx. 12—16, "Honour thy father and thy mother, that thy days may be long in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery. Thou shalt not steal. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour."

*Matthew* xxii. 32, "I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob"—compared with *Exodus* iii. 6, "Moreover he said, I am the God of thy father, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. And Moses hid his face; for he was afraid to look upon God."

*Matthew* xxii. 37, "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, and with all thy mind:" the same in *Mark* xii. 30, *Luke* x. 27, compared with *Deut.* vi. 5, "And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might."

*Matthew* xxvi. 31, "Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the

flock shall be scattered abroad"—compared with *Zechariah* xiii. 7, "Awake, O sword, against my Shepherd, and against the man that is my fellow,\* saith the Lord of hosts: smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered; and I will turn mine hand upon the little ones."

Verse 7 either was originally applied to Agrippa, (אגריפּה) the last king of the Jews, whose subjects were scattered after he had been smitten with the sword, and in an accommodated sense is applied by Jesus to himself, whose disciples were in like manner dispersed, while he was suffering afflictions from his enemies—or is directly applicable to Jesus; but in both cases his total subordination and submission to the Father of the universe is too obvious to be disputed.

*John* vi. 45, "It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man, therefore, that hath heard and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me"—compared with *Isaiah* liv. 13, "And all thy children shall be taught of the Lord; and great shall be the peace of thy children."

*John* xiii. 18, "I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen: but that the Scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heels against me"—compared with *Psalms* xli. 9, "Mine own familiar friend, in whom I trusted, which did eat of my bread, hath lifted up his heel against me," is immediately applicable to David and his friend Ahithophel, who betrayed him; and secondarily, to Jesus, and Judas, his traitorous apostle.

\* The word עמִיר found in the original Hebrew scripture, signifies one that lives near another; therefore the word "fellow" in the English translation is not altogether correct, as justly observed by Archbishop Newcome.

*John xv. 25*, "But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause"—compared with *Psalms* cix. 2, 3, "They have spoken against me with a lying tongue. They compassed me about also with words of hatred; and fought against me without a cause." Verse 3d was originally applied to David and his enemies, and in an accommodated sense to Jesus and the Jews of his day.

*Quotation made by Jesus himself, agreeing with the Hebrew in sense, but not in words.*

*Matthew xxi. 16*, "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise"—compared with *Ps. viii. 2*, and its preceding verse, "Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast ordained strength, because of thine enemies; that thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger."

*Quotation taken from combined Passages of Scripture.*

*Matthew xxi. 13*, "And said unto them, It is written; My house shall be called the house of prayer: but you have made it a den of thieves"—compared with *Isaiah lvi. 17*, "For mine house shall be called the house of prayer for all people." *Ch. vii. 11*, "Is this house which is called by my name become a den of robbers in your eyes?"

*Quotation differing from the Hebrew, but agreeing with the Septuagint.*

*Matthew xv. 7—9*, "Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto

me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men"—compared with *Isaiah* xxix. 13, which in the Septuagint corresponds exactly with the Gospel, but which in verse 9, differs from the original Hebrew, thus translated in the common version: "And their fear toward me is taught by the precepts of men."

*Quotations in which there is reason to suspect a different Reading in Hebrew, or that the Apostles understood the words in a sense different from that expressed in our Lexicons.*

*Matthew* xi. 10, "This is he of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger *before thy face*, who shall prepare thy way before *thee*"—compared with *Malachi* iii. 1, "Behold I *will* send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before *me*." *Matthew* xxvi. 31, "I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad"—compared with *Zechariah* vii. 8, "Smite the Shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered."

*Luke* iv. 8, "Thou shalt *worship* the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve"—compared with *Deut.* vi. 13, "Thou shalt *fear* the Lord thy God, and serve him."

*Quotations slightly varying from the Septuagint.*

*Luke* iv. 18, 19, "The Spirit of the Lord is upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor; he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and *recovering of sight to the blind*; to set at liberty them that are bruised; to

preach the acceptable year of the Lord"—compared with *Isaiah* lxi. 1, 2, "The Spirit of the Lord God is upon me; because the Lord hath anointed me to preach good tidings unto the meek: he hath sent me to bind up the broken-hearted, to proclaim liberty to the captives, and the opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord."

Now I beg the attention of my readers to these quotations ascribed to Jesus himself, and appeal to them, whether he assumed in any of these references the character of the Deity, or even equality with him. I am certain that they will find nothing of the kind: Jesus declared himself in these instances entirely subordinate to the Almighty God, and subject to his authority, and frequently compared himself to David or some of the other Prophets.

---

## No. II.

*On the References made to the Old Testament in  
Support of the Deity of Jesus.*

TRINITARIAN Divines quote *John* i. 14, "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth," as a reference to *Isaiah* ix. 6, "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given, and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace,"—though the evangelist *John* made no allusion to this passage of *Isaiah* in the verse in question. The passage of *Isaiah* thus referred to was applied to *Hezekiah*, the son of *Ahaz*, figuratively designated as the son of the virgin, the daughter of *Zion*, to wit *Jerusalem*, foretold by the Prophet as the deliverer of the city from the hands of its enemies, though its utter destruction was then threatened by the kings of *Syria* and *Israel*. The words "a virgin," according to the English translation, are "the virgin," both in the original Hebrew and in the Greek of the Gospel of *Matthew*, as well as in the Septuagint. But unless *Ahaz* was aware of the allusion of the Prophet, the use of the definite article in this passage must be quite inexplicable; and no one will contend for a moment, that it was given to that wicked king to understand that the mother of Christ was the virgin alluded to; what then could *Ahaz* have comprehended by the expression "the virgin"? On

referring to 2 *Kings* xix. 21, we find the same Prophet make use of the very expression, where he informs the king, *Hezekiah*, of the denunciation of God against Sennacherib, the blasphemous king of Assyria, who was at that time besieging Jerusalem. "This is the word that the Lord hath spoken concerning him; *The virgin*, the daughter of Zion, hath despised thee, and laughed thee to scorn."—It is impossible to conceive that these words, expressly spoken of the king of Assyria, bear any allusion to the virgin, the mother of Christ; and it illustrates clearly the otherwise obscure expression of the Prophet addressed to Ahaz, when he foretold to him the happy reign of his successor Hezekiah. In *Isaiah* x. 32, "He (the king of Assyria) shall shake his hand against the mount of the daughter of Zion, the hill of Jerusalem." The epithet "The daughter of Zion," which in the last passage was used as synonymous with "the virgin," here signifies Jerusalem itself, in which sense it was commonly used in the figurative language of the Prophet, and no doubt well understood by Ahaz: for we find the same words in many other passages used to signify either a city or the people of a city. *Isaiah* xxiii. 12: "And he said, Thou shalt no more rejoice, O thou oppressed *virgin*, daughter of Zion." Ch. xlvii. 1: "Come down, and sit in the dust, O *virgin* daughter of Babylon."—*Jeremiah* xiv. 17: "Therefore thou shalt say this word unto them: Let mine eyes run down with tears night and day, and let them not cease; for the *virgin* daughter of my people is broken with a great breach." Ch. xviii. 13: "Therefore thus saith the Lord; Ask ye now among the heathen, who hath heard such things: the *virgin* of Israel hath done a very horrible thing." Ch. xxxi. 4: "Again I will build thee, and thou shalt be built, O *virgin* of Israel: thou

shalt again be adorned with thy tabrets, and shalt go forth in the dances of them that make merry." Ver. 13: "Then shall the *virgin* rejoice in the dance," &c. Ver. 21: "Set thee up waymarks, make thee high heaps: set thine heart toward the highway, even the way which thou wentest: turn again, O *virgin* of Israel, turn again to these thy cities." *Lam.* i. 15: "The Lord hath trodden the *virgin*, the daughter of Judah, as in a wine-press." Ch. ii. 13: "What thing shall I take to witness for thee? what thing shall I liken to thee, O daughter of Jerusalem? what thing shall I liken to thee, O *virgin* daughter of Zion? for thy breach is great like the sea; who can heal thee?" *Amos* v. 2: "The *virgin* of Israel is fallen, she shall no more rise: she is forsaken upon her land; there is none to raise her up."

To shew that the passages in question, as well as all that is foretold in this and the succeeding chapters, refer to the reign of Hezekiah, nothing more than a comparison of them with the records of that reign is requisite. I shall therefore lay before my readers all those verses in these chapters that are commonly referred to by Trinitarians as alluding to the coming of Christ, with their contexts, together with such parts of the history of the reign of Hezekiah as appear to me to be clearly indicated by those passages.

*Isaiah* vii. 1: "And it came to pass in the days of Ahaz, the son of Jotham, the son of Uzziah, king of Judah, that Rezin the king of Syria, and Pekah the son of Remalish, king of Israel, went up toward Jerusalem to war against it, but could not prevail against it. 2, And it was told the house of David, saying, Syria is confederate with Ephraim. And his heart was moved, and the heart of his people, as the trees of the wood are moved with the wind.



3, Then said the Lord unto Isaiah, Go forth now to meet Ahaz, thou, and Shearjashub thy son, at the end of the conduit of the upper pool in the highway of the fuller's field; 4, And say unto him, Take heed, and be quiet; fear not, neither be fainthearted, for the two tails of these smoking firebrands, for the fierce anger of Rezin with Syria, and of the son of Remaliah. 5, Because Syria, Ephraim, and the son of Remaliah, have taken evil counsel against thee, saying, 6, Let us go up against Judah, and vex it, and let us make a breach therein for us, and set a king in the midst of it, *even* the son of Tabeal: 7, Thus saith the Lord God, It shall not stand, neither shall it come to pass. 8, For the head of Syria is Damascus, and the head of Damascus is Rezin; and within threescore and five years shall Ephraim be broken, that it be not a people. 9, And the head of Ephraim is Samaria, and the head of Samaria is Remaliah's son. If ye will not believe, surely ye shall not be established. 10, Moreover, the Lord spake again unto Ahaz, saying, 11, Ask thee a sign of the Lord thy God; ask it either in the depth, or in the height above. 12, But Ahaz said, I will not ask, neither will I tempt the Lord. 13, And he said, Hear ye now, O house of David, Is it a small thing for you to weary men, but will ye weary my God also? 14, Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, the virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel. 15, Butter and honey shall he eat, that he may know to refuse the evil, and choose the good. 16, For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good, the land that thou abhorrest shall be forsaken of both her kings. 17, The Lord shall bring upon thee, and upon thy people, and upon thy father's house,

days that have not come, from the day that Ephraim departed from Judah ; even the king of Assyria."

Chap. viii. 5 : " The Lord spake also unto me again, saying, 6, Forasmuch as this people refuseth the waters of Shiloah that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah's son ; 7, Now therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them the waters of the river, strong and many, even the king of Assyria, and all his glory : and he shall come up over all his channels, and go over all his banks : 8, And he shall pass through Judah ; he shall overflow and go over,—he shall reach even to the neck ; and the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Immanuel."

Chap. ix. 1 : " Nevertheless, the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun, and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. 2, The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light : they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. 3, Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the joy : they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide the spoil. 4, For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian. 5, For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood ; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given : and the government shall be upon his shoulder : and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. 7,

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end,\* upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice, from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this."

Chap. x. 5: "O Assyrian, the rod of mine anger, and the staff in their hand is mine indignation. 6, I will send him against an hypocritical nation, and against the people of my wrath will I give him a charge, to take the spoil, and to take the prey, and to tread them down like the mire of the streets. 7, Howbeit he meaneth not so, neither doth his heart think so, but it is in his heart to destroy and cut off nations not a few. 8, For he saith, Are not my princes altogether kings? 9, Is not Calno as Carchemish? is not Hamath as Arpad? is not Samaria as Damascus? † 10, As my hand hath found the kingdoms of the idols, and whose graven images did excel them of Jerusalem and of Samaria; 11, Shall I not, as I have done unto Samaria and her idols, so do to Jerusalem and her idols? 12, Wherefore it shall come to pass, that, when the Lord hath performed his whole work upon mount Zion and on Jerusalem, I will punish the fruit of the stout

\* Those that are at all versed in scriptural language will attach no weight to the terms "no end" and "for ever," found in ch. v. 7; for the former often signifies plenteousness, and the latter long but not eternal duration. Vide Eccl. iv. 16: "There is no end of all the people, even of all that have been before them." Isaiah ii. 7: "Neither is there any end of their treasure, neither is there any end of their chariots." Nahum ii. 9: "There is none end of their store." Ch. iii. 3: "And there is none end of their corpses." Psalm cxlv. 2, 9: "I will praise thy name for ever and ever." Deut. xv. 17: "And he shall be thy servant for ever."

† Compare vers. 9—11, with the historical relation of the vain boastings of the Assyrian, narrated in 2 Kings xviii. 33—35.

heart of the king of Assyria, and the glory of his high looks."—16, "Therefore shall the Lord, the Lord of hosts, send among his fat ones leanness; and under his glory he shall kindle a burning like the burning of a fire. 17, And the light of Israel shall be for a fire, and his *Holy One* for a flame: and it shall burn and devour his thorns and briers in one day."—24, "Therefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, O my people that dwellest in Zion, be not afraid of the Assyrian: he shall smite thee with a rod, and shall lift up his staff against thee, after the manner of Egypt. 25, For yet a very little while, and the indignation shall cease, and mine anger, in their destruction." 27, \* "And it shall come to pass in that day, that his burden shall be taken away from off thy shoulder, and his yoke from off thy neck, and the yoke shall be destroyed because of the anointing."

2 *Kings* xviii. 1: "Now it came to pass, in the third year of Hoshea son of Elah king of Israel, that Hezekiah the son of Ahaz king of Judah began to reign. 2, Twenty and five years old was he when he began to reign; and he reigned twenty and nine years in Jerusalem: his mother's name also was Abi, the daughter of Zachariah. 3, And he did that which was right in the sight of the Lord, according to all that David his father did. 4, He removed the high places, and brake the images, and cut down the groves, and brake in pieces the brazen serpent that Moses had made: for unto those days the children of Israel did burn incense to it; and he called it Nehushtan. 5, He trusted in the Lord God of Israel; so that *after him* was none like him among all the kings of Judah, nor any that

\* Compare with 2 *Kings* xvi. 7, "So Ahaz sent messengers to Tiglath-pileser King of Assyria, saying, I am thy servant and thy son," &c., and ch. xviii. 7, as above.

were *before him*. 6, For he clave to the Lord, and departed not from following him, but kept his commandments, which the Lord commanded Moses. 7, And the Lord was with him: and he prospered whithersoever he went forth: and he rebelled against the king of Assyria and served him not. 8, He smote the Philistines, even unto Gaza, and the borders thereof, from the tower of the watchmen to the fenced city."—17, "And the king of Assyria sent Tartan, and Rabaris, and Rab-shakeh, from Lachish to king Hezekiah, with a great host against Jerusalem. And they went up and came to Jerusalem. And when they were come up, they came and stood by the conduit of the upper pool, which is in the highway of the fuller's field."—28, "Then Rab-shakeh stood, and cried with a loud voice in the Jews' language, and spake, saying, Hear the word of the great king, the king of Assyria: 29, Thus saith the king, Let not Hezekiah deceive you: for he shall not be able to deliver you out of his hand: 30, Neither let Hezekiah make you trust in the Lord, saying, The Lord will surely deliver us, and this city shall not be delivered into the hand of the king of Assyria. 31, Hearken not unto Hezekiah: for thus saith the king of Assyria, Make an agreement with me by a present, and come out to me, and then eat ye every man of his own vine, and every one of his fig-tree, and drink ye every one the waters of his cistern: 32, Until I come and take you away to a land like your own land; a land of corn and wine, a land of bread and vineyards, a land of oil-olive and of honey, that ye may live, and not die; and hearken not unto Hezekiah, when he persuadeth you, saying, The Lord will deliver us. 33, Hath any of the gods of the nations delivered at all his land out of the hand of the king of Assyria? 34, Where are the gods of Hamath, and of Arpad? where

are the gods of Sepharvaim, Hena, and Ivah? have they delivered Samaria out of mine hand? 35, Who are they among all the gods of the countries that have delivered their country out of mine hand, that the Lord should deliver Jerusalem out of mine hand?"

Chap. xix. 15: "And Hezekiah prayed before the Lord, and said, O Lord God of Israel, which dwellest between the cherubims, thou art the God, even thou alone, of all the kingdoms of the earth; thou hast made heaven and earth. 16, Lord, bow down thine ear, and hear: open, Lord, thine eyes, and see: and hear the words of Sennacherib, which hath sent him to reproach the living God." 19, "Now therefore, O Lord our God, I beseech thee save thou us out of his hand, that all the kingdoms of the earth may know that thou art the Lord God, even thou only. 20, Then Isaiah the son of Amoz sent to Hezekiah, saying, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, That which thou hast prayed to me against Sennacherib king of Assyria I have heard. 21, This is the word that the Lord hath spoken concerning him; *The virgin, the daughter of Zion*, hath despised thee, and laughed thee to scorn; the daughter of Jerusalem hath shaken her head at thee. 22, Whom hast thou reproached and blasphemed? and against whom hast thou exalted thy voice, and lifted up thine eyes on high? even against the Holy One of Israel. 23, By thy messengers thou hast reproached the Lord, and hast said, With the multitude of my chariots I am come up to the height of the mountains, to the sides of Lebanon, and will cut down the tall cedar trees thereof, and the choice fir trees thereof: and I will enter into the lodgings of his borders, and into the forest of his Carmel."—27, "But I know thy abode, and thy going out, and thy coming in, and thy rage against me. 28, Because thy rage against me and thy

tumult is come up into mine ears, therefore I will put my hook in thy nose, and my bridle in thy lips, and I will turn thee back by the way by which thou camest." 32, "Therefore thus saith the Lord concerning the king of Assyria, He shall not come into this city, nor shoot an arrow there, nor come before it with shield, nor cast a bank against it. 33, By the way that he came, by the same shall he return, and shall not come into this city, saith the Lord. 34, For I will defend this city, to save it, for mine own sake, and for my servant David's sake. 35, And it came to pass that night, that the angel of the Lord went out, and smote in the camp of the Assyrians an hundred fourscore and five thousand : and when they arose early in the morning, behold, they were all dead corpses. 36, So Sennacherib king of Assyria departed, and went and returned, and dwelt at Nineveh. 37, And it came to pass, as he was worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, that Adrammelech and Sharezer his sons smote him with the sword ; and they escaped into the land of Armenia : and Esar-haddon his son reigned in his stead."

2 *Chron.* xxx. 24 : " For Hezekiah king of Judah did give to the congregation a thousand bullocks, and seven thousand sheep ; and the princes gave to the congregation a thousand bullocks, and ten thousand sheep : and a great number of priests sanctified themselves. 25, And all the congregation of Judah, with the priests and the Levites, and all the congregation that came out of Israel, and the strangers that came out of the land of Israel, and that dwelt in Judah, rejoiced. 26, So there was great joy in Jerusalem ; for since the time of Solomon, the son of David king of Israel, there was not the like in Jerusalem. 27, Then the priests the Levites arose and blessed the

people : and their voice was heard, and their prayer came up to his holy dwelling-place, even unto heaven."

Chap. xxxi. 20 : "And thus did Hezekiah throughout all Judah, and wrought that which was good and right and truth before the Lord his God. 21, And in every work that he began in the service of the house of God, and in the law, and in the commandments, to seek his God, he did it with all his heart, and prospered."

Chap. xxxii. 23 : "And many brought gifts unto the Lord to Jerusalem, and presents to Hezekiah king of Judah : so that he was magnified in the sight of all nations from thenceforth." 33, "And Hezekiah slept with his fathers, and they buried him in the chiefest of the sepulchres of the sons of David : and all Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem did him honour at his death. And Manasseh his son reigned in his stead."

If, as is declared by Trinitarians, the child promised in ch. vii. 14, be the same that is alluded to in ch. ix. 6, and ch. x. 17, it is quite evident from the context, that he was to be the deliverer of the Jews from the hands of the king of Assyria, and was to be distinguished by the excellence of his administration and the respect in which he was to be held by all nations. Making allowance for the hyperbolic style of Eastern nations, nothing can more aptly apply as prophecy than these passages do to the reign of Hezekiah, as described in the above extracts from *Kings* and *Chronicles*. But what, it may be asked, had the birth of Christ to do with the destruction of the king of Assyria ? or how could it be said that before he "knew to refuse the evil and choose the good," the land of Syria and of Israel should be deserted of their respective kings Rezin and Pekah, who were gathered to their fathers many years before his birth ?



This illustrious son of Ahaz was not the only king among the select nation of God, that was honoured with such names as Hezekiah or "God my strength," and "Emmanuel" or "God with us;" and also with such epithets as "Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, and the Prince of Peace." We find several other chiefs of that tribe that used to walk in the way of God, dignified in Scripture with epithets of a similar import. *Genesis xxxii. 28*: "And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel (Prince of God): for as a prince hast thou power with God and with men, and hast prevailed." *Psalms lxxxix. 18*: "For the Lord is our defence; and THE HOLY ONE of Israel is our king. 19, Then thou spakest in vision to *thy Holy One*, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is *mighty*: I have exalted one chosen out of the people. 20, I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I *anointed* him: 27, Also I will make him MY FIRSTBORN, higher than the kings of the *earth*."

As to the word "a virgin," found in the English translation, I request my readers to advert to the original Hebrew מלכה "the virgin," as well as to the Greek both of the Septuagint and the Gospel of *Matthew*, *ἡ παρθένα*: "the virgin," leaving it to them to judge, whether a translation which so entirely perverts the meaning preserved throughout, by men whom we cannot suspect of ignorance of the original language, must not have proceeded from a previous determination to apply the term "virgin," as found in the Prophet, to the mother of Christ, in order that the high titles applied to Hezekiah might in the most unqualified manner be understood of Jesus.

The Evangelist Matthew referred in his Gospel to *Isaiah vii. 14*, merely for the purpose of accommodation;

the Son of Ahaz and the Saviour resembling each other, in each being the means, at different periods, though in different senses, of establishing the throne of the house of David. In the same manner he referred to *Hosea* xi. 1, in ch. ii. 15 of his Gospel, and in many other instances. How inconsistent is it that a sect, which maintains the omniscience and omnipotence of Jesus, should apply to him a passage, by which he is made subject to such a degree of ignorance, as not to be able at one period to distinguish between good and evil. (*Isaiah* vii. 16: "For before the child shall know to refuse the evil, and choose the good," &c.) Admitting that these quotations in *Isaiah* were originally applicable to Jesus, they cannot assist in proving the Deity of the Messiah; just as they fall short of proving the divinity of Hezekiah when applied to him:—for we find in the sacred writings the name of God, and even the term of Jehovah, the peculiar name of God, applied as an appellation to others, without establishing any argument for asserting the Deity of those to whom such names are given. *Jeremiah* xxxiii. 16: "In those days shall Judah be saved, and Jerusalem shall dwell safely: and this is the name wherewith she shall be called, JEHOVAH OUR RIGHTEOUSNESS." In the English version, the word Jehovah is rendered "Lord" in this and in other passages.—*Exodus* xvii. 15: "And Moses built an altar, and called the name of it Jehovah-nissi, or 'JEHOVAH MY BANNER.'" It is fortunate that some sect has not hitherto arisen, maintaining the Deity of Jerusalem, or of the altar of Moses, from the authority of the passages just mentioned.

In the Epistle to the Hebrews, ch. i. 8, 9, reference is made to *Psalms* xlv. 6, 7, "Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever, &c. Thou lovest righteousness, and hatest

wickedness : therefore God, thy God, hath anointed thee," &c. I have frequently noticed that the term "God" in an inferior sense is often applied in the Scriptures to the Messiah and other distinguished persons ; but it deserves particularly to be noticed in this instance, that the Messiah, in whatever sense he is declared God, is in the very same sense described in ch. v. 6 ("God thy God") as *having a God superior to him, and by whom he was appointed to the office of Messiah.*

*Supposed application of the term "Jehovah" to Jesus in references made to the Old Testament.*

*Luke i. 16, 17:* "And many of the children of Israel shall he (John the Baptist) turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just ; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord"—compared with *Isaiah xl. 3*, "The voice of him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of Jehovah, make straight in the desert a highway for our God:" and also in *Malachi iii. 1*, "Behold, I will send my messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me : and the Lord whom ye seek, shall suddenly come to his temple, even the messenger of the covenant, whom ye delight in : behold, he shall come, saith Jehovah of hosts." From this, it is concluded by Trinitarians, that because the Prophet John is described as the forerunner of Jehovah, and in the evangelist as the forerunner of Jesus, therefore Jesus must be Jehovah.

In reply to this, it may be simply observed, that we find in the Prophet distinct and separate mention of Jehovah and of the Messiah as the messenger of the covenant ;

John therefore ought to be considered as the forerunner of both, in the same manner as a commander sent in advance to occupy a strong post in the country of the enemy, may be said to be preparing the way for the battles of his king, or of the general whom the king places at the head of his army.

They also refer to *Isaiah* vi. 5, "For mine eyes have seen the King, the Lord of hosts"—comparing it with *John* xii. 41, "These things said Isaiah, when he saw his glory, and spake of him." The passage in the evangelist is more correctly explained by referring to *John* viii. 56, "Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day;" which cannot be understood of ocular vision, but prophetic anticipation; whereas the glory seen in the vision of Isaiah was that of God himself in the delivery of the commands given to the Prophet on that occasion.

*Corinthians* i. 30, "But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness," &c. is compared with *Jeremiah* xxiii. 6, "He shall be called Jehovah our righteousness." In reply to which I only refer my reader again to the passage in *Jeremiah* xxxiii. 16, in which Jerusalem also is called "Jehovah our righteousness," and to the phrase "*is made unto us of God*" found in the passage in question, and expressing the inferiority of Jesus to God. Also *2 Cor.* v. 21, "That we might be made the righteousness of God in him," where St. Paul says, that all Christians may be made the righteousness of God.

Mr. Brown, a celebrated Trinitarian Commentator, retains the common version of *Jeremiah* xxiii. 6, and applies it to Jesus, whom he supposes to be "Jehovah our righteousness." But in ch. xxxiii. 16, where the construction in the original Hebrew is precisely the same, he

alters the version, and thus renders it in the margin, "he who shall call her is Jehovah our righteousness," instead of applying the phrase "Jehovah our righteousness" to Jerusalem, in the same manner as he had applied it to Jesus in the former passage.—I therefore deem it necessary to give the original Hebrew of both texts, and a verbal translation of them. The reader will judge how strongly the judgment of the learned Commentator was biased in support of a favourite doctrine. *Jer.* xxiii. 6, בימיו חושע יהודה, "In his days shall be saved Judah, and Israel shall dwell in safety, and this his name which (man) shall call him, Jehovah our righteousness." *Jer.* xxxiii. 16, בימים החם חושע, יהודה וירושלם תשכון לבטח וזה אשר יקרא לה יהוה צדקו "In those days shall be saved Judah, and Jerusalem shall dwell in safety, and this (name) which (man) shall call her, Jehovah our righteousness."

In altering the common translation of the latter passage, Mr. Brown first disregards the stop after יקרא לה that is, "shall call her;" which, by separating the two parts of the sentence, prevents Jehovah from being employed as the agent of the verb "shall call." 2ndly, He entirely neglects the established mode of construction, by leaving זה or "this," untranslated, and by omitting to point out the name by which Jerusalem should be called. 3dly, He totally overlooks the idiom of the Hebrew, in which verbs are often employed unaccompanied with their agent, when no specific agent is intended, as appears from the following passages:—

*Gen.* xxv. 26, ואחרי כן יצא [יצא] אחיו וידו אחזת בעקב עשו, "And after that came his brother out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel, and (man) called his

name Jacob." 2 *Samuel* ii. 16, "וַיִּחַזְקוּ אִישׁ בְּרֹאשׁ רֵעֵהוּ וַחֲרָבוֹ, בְּצַד רֵעֵהוּ וַיַּפְּלוּ יָחַד וַיִּקְרָא לַמָּקוֹם הַהוּא חֶלְקֶת חֲזָרִים אֲשֶׁר בְּגִבְעוֹן " And they caught every one his fellow by the head, and thrust his sword in his fellow's side; so they fell down together: wherefore (man) called that place Helkath Hazurem, which is in Gibeon." *Genesis* xvi. 14, "עַל כֵּן קָרָא לַבְּאֵר בְּאֵר לַחֵי רֹאִי " Wherefore (man) called the well Beer-lahai-roi."

They again adduce *Isaiah* xlv. 23, "Unto me (God) every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear"—compared with *Romans* xiv. 10, 12, "But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? For we shall all stand before the judgment-seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God." Between the Prophet and the Apostle there is a perfect agreement in substance, since both declare that it is to God that every knee shall bow, and every tongue shall confess, through him before whose judgment-seat we shall all stand:—for at the same time both Jesus and his Apostles inform us, that we must stand before the judgment-seat of Christ, because the Father has committed the office of final judgment to him.—From this passage, they say, it appears that Jesus swore by himself, and that thereby he is proved to be God, according to the rule, that it is God only that can swear by himself. But how can they escape the context, which expressly informs us, that "the Lord" (Jehovah), and not Jesus, swore in this manner? We must not however overlook what the Apostle says in his epistle to the *Philippians*, ch. ii. 9—11, where he declares, that at the name of Jesus every knee shall

bow and every tongue shall confess ; but neither must we forget, that Jesus is declared to have been exalted to these honours by God, and that the only confession required is that he is Lord, which office confession of his dignity is to the glory of God the Father. 9, "Wherefore God also hath highly *exalted* him, and *given* him a name which is above every name ; 10, That at the name of Jesus every knee shall bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth ; 11, And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

Some have adopted a most extraordinary way of establishing the deity of Jesus. Any epithet or act, however common it may be, ascribed to God in the Sacred Writings, and also to Christ in the New Testament, is adduced by them as a proof of his deity ; and I observe with the utmost surprise, that the prejudice of many Christians in favour of the doctrine of the Trinity induces them to lay stress upon such sophisms. For instance, *Isaiah* xliii. 3, "For I am the Lord thy God, the Holy one of Israel, thy Saviour"—compared with 2 *Peter* iii. 18, "Our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ." The conclusion they draw from these passages is, that unless Jesus were God, he could not be a Saviour : but how futile this reasoning is will clearly appear from the following passages : *Nehemiah* ix. 27, "Thou gavest them saviours, who saved them." *Obad.* 27, "And saviours shall come up on Mount Zion." 2 *Kings* xiii. 5, "And the Lord gave Israel a Saviour, so they went out from under the hand of the Syrians : and the children of Israel dwelt in their tents, as beforetime." *Isaiah* xix. 19, 20, "In that day shall there be an altar to the Lord in the midst of the land of Egypt, and a pillar at the border thereof to the Lord. And it shall be for a sign

and for a witness unto the Lord of Hosts in the land of Egypt: for they shall cry unto the Lord because of the oppressors, and he shall send them a Saviour, and a great one, and he shall deliver them." If this argument possesses any force, then it would lead us to acknowledge the deity not only of Jesus, but that of those different individuals to whom the term "Saviours" or "Saviour" is applied in the above citations. The phrase in *Isaiah*, "Besides me there is no Saviour," is easily accounted for by considering, that all those who have been instrumental in effecting the deliverance of their fellow-creatures from evils of whatever nature were dependent themselves upon God, and only instruments in his hands; and thus all appearance of inconsistency is removed.

Again, *Ps.* xxiii. 1, "Jehovah is my Shepherd"—compared with *John* x. 16, "And other sheep I have, which are not of his [this] fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one Shepherd." In the former text, David declared God to be his shepherd or protector; in the latter, Jesus represents himself as the one shepherd of the one fold of Christians, some of whom were already attached to him, and others were afterwards to become converts: but Trinitarian writers thus conclude from these passages: if Christ be not one with Jehovah, he could not be called a Shepherd, and thus there would be two shepherds: but a little reflection on the following passages will convince every unbiassed person, that Moses is called a shepherd in like manner, and his followers a flock; and that the term "shepherd" is applied to others also, without conveying the idea of their unity with Jehovah. *Isaiah* lxiii. 11, "Then he remembered the days of old, Moses and his people, saying, Where is he that brought them up out of



the sea with the shepherd of his flock ?" *Ezekiel* xxxiv. 23, 24, "And *I will set up one shepherd* over them, and he shall feed them, even *my servant David*; he shall feed them, and he shall be their shepherd. And I the Lord will be their God, and *my servant David* a prince among them. I the Lord have spoken it." If they insist (though without any ground) upon interpreting the name David as put for Jesus, they must still attribute his shepherdship over his flock to divine commission, and must relinquish the idea of unity between God the employer, and the Messiah his *servant*. *Jeremiah* xxiii. 4, "I will set up shepherds over them, which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord."

*Psalms* lxxviii. 56, "They tempted and provoked the most high God"—compared with [1] *Cor.* x. 9, "Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted." They thus conclude: the former passage declares the most high God to have been tempted by rebellious Israelites, and in the latter, Jesus is represented to have been the person tempted by some of them, consequently Jesus is the most high God. How far cannot prejudice lead astray men of sense! Is it not an insult to reason, to infer the deity of Jesus from the circumstance of his being in common with God, tempted by Israel and others? Are we not all, in common with Jesus, liable to be tempted both by men and by Satan? *Hebrews* iv. 15, "For we have not an high priest who cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points *tempted like as we are*, yet without sin." *Genesis* xxii. 1, "And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham." Can the liability to temptation common to God, to Jesus, to Abraham, and to all mankind, be of any

avail to prove the divinity and unity of these respective subjects of temptation ?

We find Moses in common with God is spoken against by the rebellious Israelites. *Numb.* xxi. 5, "And the people (Israel) spoke against God, and against Moses." Are we to conclude upon this ground, that [because] God as well as Moses is declared to have been spoken against by Israel, that Moses therefore is God himself? In the same text quoted by them, we find the most high God provoked also—(they tempted and provoked the most high God)—so we find Moses and David provoked at different times. *Numbers* xxi. 1, "And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David;" and *Psalms* cvi. 32, 33, "It went ill with Moses for their sakes: because they provoked his spirit, so that he spake unadvisedly with his lips." Can any one from the circumstance of Moses and David having been the subjects of provocation, in common with God, be justified in attempting to prove the deity of either of them ?

*Ps.* [*Isaiah*] liv. 5, "Thy Maker is thine husband, the Lord of hosts is his name"—compared with *John* iii. 29, "He that hath the bride is the bridegroom," &c. [*Eph.*] v. 23, "For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church," &c. From these they infer, that as the Church is one bride, so on the other hand there is one husband, who is termed in one place God, and in another place Christ. My readers will be pleased to examine the language employed in these two instances: in the one, God is represented as the husband of all his creatures, and in the other, Christ is declared to be the husband or the head of his followers; there is, therefore, an inequality of authority evidently ascribed to God and to Jesus. Moreover, Christ himself shews the

relation that existed between him and his Church, and himself and God, in *John* xv. 1, "I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman"—[5,] "I am the vine, ye are the branches." Would it not be highly unreasonable to set at defiance the distinction drawn by Jesus between God, himself, and his Church, and to attempt a conclusion directly contrary to his authority, and unsupported by revelation?

*Revelation* xxii. 13, "I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last"—compared with *Isaiah* xlv. 6, "Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and his redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God." From a comparison of these verses they conclude, that there is no God besides him who is the first and the last; but Jesus is the first and the last; therefore besides Jesus there is no other God. I must embrace this opportunity of laying before my readers the context of the verse in Revelation, which will, I presume, shew to every unbiassed mind how the verse in question has been misapplied; since the verse cited in defence of the deity of Jesus, when considered in relation to the passages that precede and follow it, most clearly declares his inferiority and his distinct nature from the Father. *Revelation* xxii. 6, "And he (the angel) said unto me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must shortly be done. 7, Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this book. 8, And I John saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel who shewed me these things. 9, Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not: for I am thy fellow-servant, and of

thy brethren the prophets, and of them which keep the sayings of this book : worship God. 10, And he saith unto me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book : for the time is at hand. 11, He that is unjust, let him be unjust still : and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still : and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still : and he that is holy, let him be holy still. 12, And, behold, I come quickly ; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. 13, I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. 14, Blessed are they that do *his* commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates into the city. 15, For without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. 16, I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify unto you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David, and the bright and morning star."

If they ascribe verse 13, ("I am Alpha and Omega," &c.) to Jesus, and not to the angel mentioned in the above passage, they must also unavoidably ascribe to Jesus the passage coming immediately before or after it, including of course verse the 9th, "Then saith he unto me, See thou do it not : for I am thy fellow-servant," &c., for there is but one agent described by the pronoun "*He*" in the whole train of the verses above quoted, who is pointed out clearly by the repetition of the phrase, "Behold I come quickly," in verses 7th and 12th. In this case the passage, although it speaks of Jesus as Alpha and Omega, &c., yet must be considered as denying him the divine nature, and ranking him among the chosen servants of God ("For I am thy fellow-servant"). If they ascribe all the verses of chap. xxii. as far as verse the 16th, to the

angel, they cannot justify themselves in founding their conclusion with regard to the deity of Jesus upon the force of verse the 13th, "I am Alpha and Omega," &c., which in the latter case can bear no relation to Christ, since their system requires them to apply it to an inferior angel. I beg the attention of my readers to five particular circumstances in this instance. 1st, That the angel whom the Lord sent, as intimated in verse the 6th, was intended to shew his servants in general things that would shortly happen; and the angel sent by Jesus, as found in verse 16th, was to testify to John and other disciples the things relating to the churches. 2dly, Jesus declares in verse 16th, and in the subsequent verses, that he is the offspring of David, and that it is God that has the power of punishing any one who either takes away from or adds any thing to his revelation. 3dly, That the passage in *Revelation* xxii. 13, is not parallel to that contained in the prophecy of *Isaiah* xlv. 6, since the phrase "*Besides me there is no God,*" which is found in the latter, and upon which the whole controversy turns, is not contained in the former. 4thly, That when the angel rejected the worship of John addressed to himself, he ordered him to worship God, without mentioning the name either jointly or separately of the Lamb, by which Jesus is distinguished throughout the Revelation:—"Worship God," ver. 9. 5thly, in the very next verse, after the speaker, whether Jesus or an angel, describes himself as Alpha and Omega, he uses the expression, "Blessed are they that do *his* commandments," clearly indicating the existence of another being to whose *commandments* obedience is required.

It is worth noticing here, that the terms "Alpha and Omega, beginning and end," are in a finite sense justly

applicable to Jesus as the first of all created existences, and the last of those who will be required to resign the authority with which he is invested by the Father. See *Colossians* i. 15, "The first-born of every creature;" 1 *Corinthians* xv. 28, "Then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him."

*Isaiah* xl. 10, "Behold, the Lord God will come with a strong hand, and his arm shall rule for him: behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him"—is compared with *Revelation* xxii. 12, "I come quickly; and my reward is with me." From the circumstance of the common application of the phrase, "his reward is with him," to God and to Jesus, they infer the deity of the latter; in answer to which I beg to refer my readers to the foregoing paragraphs illustrating verse 11th, which immediately precedes the verse in question of the *Revelation*, and also to *John* v. 30, 22, "As I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father who hath sent me. The Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son;" and to *Matthew* xvi. 27, "For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works." Do not these passages point out evidently, that the power of exercising judgment and of distributing rewards *has been given* to Jesus by the Almighty, and that Jesus possesses this authority in behalf of the *Father* of the universe?

*Ephesians* iv. 8, "When he (Christ) ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men"—compared with *Psalms* lxviii. 18, "Thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive: thou hast received gifts for men, yea, for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them." The Jews are of opinion

that David in this verse spoke of Moses, who when he ascended to Mount Sinai, received gifts (i. e. the divine commandments) for men, even for the rebellious Israelites; in this case the Apostle Paul in his epistle, must have applied the verse in an accommodated sense to Jesus. The verse in the Psalm may be directly applied to Jesus, who, on his ascension, received gifts of pardon even for those who had rebelled against him. Mr. Brown, a celebrated Trinitarian Commentator, and several others, consider the 18th verse in this *Psalm*, and verse 8th in this chapter of *Ephesians*, as immediately applicable to Jesus, as the Messiah. But another writer, Mr. Jones, with a view to establish the deity of Christ by a comparison of *Ephesians* iv. 8, with *Psalm* lxxviii. 18, omits carefully the latter part of the verse, ("Thou hast received gifts for men, yea, for the rebellious also, that the Lord God might dwell among them,") which is altogether inapplicable to God, and quotes only the first part of the verse, ("thou hast ascended on high, thou hast led captivity captive;") and thence draws this conclusion—"The Scripture here (in the Epistle referred to) expressly affirms the person who ascends, &c. to be the Lord God." From a view of the whole verse, the sense must, according to this mode of reasoning, be as follows—"The person who ascended on high, and who *received* gifts for men, *that the Lord God* might dwell among them, is the Lord God;" an interpretation, which as implying that the Lord God ascended and received gifts from a Being of course superior to himself, in order that he might dwell among men, is equally absurd and unscriptural.

*Zechariah* xii. 10, as found in the English Version, "In that day they shall look upon me whom they have pierced"—compared with *John* xix. 37, "They shall look

on him whom they pierced ;” from which comparison he has thus concluded—“ As it stands in the Prophet, the Lord Jehovah was to be pierced ; so that unless the man Christ who hung upon the cross was also the Lord Jehovah, the Evangelist is found to be a false witness, in applying to him a prophecy that could not possibly be fulfilled in him.” In order to shew the source of Mr. Jones’s error, I beg to lay before my readers the verse in Hebrew, and a translation thereof from the Arabic Bible, as well as a correct translation into English.

ושפכתי על בית דויד ועל יושב ירושלם רוח חן וחחנונים  
והבישו אלי את אשר דקרו וספרו עליו כמספר על היחיד  
וחמר עליו כחמר על הבכור

واصب علي بيت داود و علي سكان اورشليم روح  
النعمة و الرافة و ينظرون الي من اجل انه—م رفضوا  
وينوحون عليهم مناة مثل علي وحيد و يتوجعون  
وجعا مثل علي بكر

“ And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplication : and they shall look *toward me on account of him whom* they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him as one mourneth for his own son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his first-born.” This translation is strongly confirmed by the Septuagint, whose words I subjoin with a literal rendering—

Καὶ ἐπιέλευσται πρὸς με, ἀπὸ τῶν καταρριχθέντων.

“ And they shall look *towards me*, on account of those whom they pierced.”

In the Prophet the Lord speaks of Israel at the approach of their restoration, when they will look up to God for



mercy on account of their cruelty to the Messiah, whom they pierced, and for whom they will mourn and lament. Hence the prophecy in question has been fulfilled in Jesus, without representing the Lord (Jehovah) as the object pierced; and consequently no false testimony is chargeable upon John the Evangelist, who, by changing the object of the verse from "me" found in the Hebrew and Septuagint into "him," we may suppose had in view the general import rather than the particular expressions of the prophecy, pointing out that they looked to the Messiah also, whom they had pierced. Without referring to the Hebrew phrase, which shews beyond doubt the inaccuracy of the English translation of the verse, common sense is, I presume, sufficient to shew, that since in the last two clauses in the verse under consideration the Lord God speaks of the Messiah in the third person—"for him they (i. e. the Israelites) will mourn and lament," he must be supposed to have spoken of the same third person as pierced by them unjustly, and thus to have pointed out the cause of their lamentation. If Jehovah had been pierced, he would have been mentioned throughout in the first person, also as the object of lamentation and bitterness.

1 *Peter* ii. 6, "Wherefore also it is contained in the Scripture, Behold, *I lay in Zion* a chief corner-stone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded. 7, Unto you therefore which believe he is precious: but unto them who are disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, 8, And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient; whereunto also they were appointed"—compared with *Isaiah* xxviii. 16, "Therefore thus saith

the Lord God, Behold, *I lay in Zion* for a foundation, a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner-stone, a sure foundation; he that believeth shall not make haste;" and *Isaiah* viii. 13, "Sanctify the Lord of hosts himself; let him be your fear, and let him be your dread. 14, And he shall be for a sanctuary; but for a stone of stumbling, and for a rock of offence, to both the houses of Israel; for a gin and for a snare to the inhabitants of Jerusalem."

These passages shew, that the Lord God placed the Messiah as a corner-stone for the temple, and that whoever stumbles at that stone so exalted by the Almighty, stumbles at or disobeys him who has thus placed it. But Mr. Jones omits the words found in *1 Peter* ii. 6, and *Isaiah* xxviii. 16, "I lay in Zion a chief corner-stone, precious," &c. which shew the created nature of the Messiah, and after quoting a part of vers. 7 and 8 of *1 Peter*, ch. ii. ("The stone which the builder disallowed, the same is made the head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence,") and only verse 13th and part of the 14th of ch. viii. of *Isaiah*, he has thus concludes:—"This stone of stumbling and rock of offence, as it appears from the latter text, (the text in *Peter*,) is no other than Christ, the same stone which the builders rejected. Therefore Christ is the Lord of hosts himself." —Here the Apostle *Peter*, in conformity with the Prophet, represents God as the founder of the corner-stone, and Jesus as the same corner-stone, which, though it be disallowed by the Jews, yet is *made* by the same founder, the head of the corner; but the Jews from their disobedience stumbled directly at the stone so exalted, rendering it a stone of stumbling and rock of offence; and hereby they stumbled secondarily at the founder of this stone, and offended the Lord God; who, though he was the rock of

defence of Israel, (rock of refuge, *Psalm* xciv. 24,) became a stone of stumbling and [a] rock of offence.

Thus in *Luke* x. 16, Jesus declares to his disciples, "He that despiseth you, despiseth me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me;" intimating by these words, that contempt for the holy doctrines which Christ commissioned his disciples to teach, argued contempt for him by whom Christ himself was sent; but no one will thence infer the deity of those disciples. In vers. 6 and 7 in question, and in ver. 4 of the same chapter of *Peter*, ("To whom coming as unto a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God and precious,") Jesus is distinctly declared to be "*a* stone of stumbling," "*a* living stone chosen of God;" the indefinite article "*a*" here denoting that he is only one of many such stones. It is surprising that Mr. Jones could overlook these phrases, and conclude upon the identity of Jesus with God from metaphorical language, which represents God as "*a* stumbling stone" of Israel, and Jesus a stumbling stone of those who never believed him. That there is nothing peculiar in Jesus being called a stone or a shepherd, see *Genesis* xlix. 24, where in a metaphorical sense Joseph is called "*the* shepherd and the stone of Israel."

The Hebrew language, in common with other Asiatic tongues, frequently indulges in metaphor; and consequently the Old Testament, written in that language, abounds with expressions which cannot be taken in their literal sense. This indeed Jesus himself points out in *John* x. 34—36, in which he justifies the assumption of the title of Son of God, to denote that he was sanctified and sent of the Father, by shewing that in the Scriptures the name even of God was sometimes metaphorically applied to men of power or exalted rank. Hence we find

epithets which in their strict sense in their most common application are peculiar to God, applied to inferior beings, as I have already noticed. But the Scripture avoids affording the least pretext of misunderstanding the real nature of such objects, by various adjuncts and epithets of obvious meaning, quite inapplicable to the Deity. It is melancholy, however, to observe, how frequently men overlook the idiom of the language of Scripture, and (apparently misled by the force of preconceived notions) set aside every expression that modifies those that suit their peculiar ideas.

Were we to admit common phrases applied both to God and to Jesus as a proof of the divinity of the latter, we must upon the same ground be led to acknowledge the deity of Moses, of David, and of other Prophets, who are in common with God the subjects of peculiar phrases. Moses in *Deut.* xxx. 15 declares, "See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil." So Jehovah declares in *Jeremiah* xxi. 8, "Behold, I set before you the way of life, and the way of death." In conformity to this mode of argument adopted by Trinitarian writers, we should thus conclude from these passages—unless Moses were one with Jehovah, he could not in his own name employ the same authoritative phrase which is used by Jehovah. In the same manner the term worship is equally applied to God and David in *Chronicles* xxix. 20, "And David said to all the congregation, Now bless the Lord your God. And all the congregation blessed the Lord God of their fathers, and bowed down their heads, and worshipped the Lord and the king." Whence, according to their mode of argument, every one must find himself justified in drawing the following conclusion: God is the only object of worship—but the term worship

is in the Bible applied to David—David must therefore be acknowledged as God.

I have now noticed all the arguments founded on Scripture that I have heard of as advanced in support of the doctrine of the Trinity, except such as appeared to me so futile as to be unworthy of remark ; and in the course of my examination have plainly stated the grounds on which I conceive them to be inadmissible. Perhaps my opinions may subject me to the severe censure of those who dissent from me, and some will be ready to discover particular motives for my presuming to differ from the great majority of Christian teachers of the present day in my view of Christianity, with the doctrines of which I have become but recently acquainted.—Personal interest can hardly be alleged as likely to have actuated me, and therefore the love of distinction or notoriety may perhaps be resorted to, to account for conduct which they wish it to be believed honest conviction could never direct.—In reply to such an accusation, I can only protest in the most solemn manner, that even in the belief that I have been successful in combating the doctrine of Trinitarians, I cannot assume to myself the smallest merit :—for what credit can be gained in proving that one is not three, and that the same being cannot be at once man and God ; or in opposing those who maintain, that all who do not admit doctrines so incomprehensible must be therefore subjected by the All-merciful to eternal punishment ? It is too true to be denied, that we are led by the force of the senses to believe many things that we cannot fully understand. But where the evidence of sense does not compel us, how can we believe what is not only beyond our comprehension, but contrary to it and to the common course of nature, and directly against revelation ; which declares positively the unity of

God, as well as his incomprehensibility; but no where ascribes to him any number of persons, or any portion of magnitude? *Job xxxvi. 26*, "Behold God is great, and we know him not." *Ch. xxxvii. 23*, "Touching the Almighty, we cannot find him out." *Psalm cxlv. 3*, "His greatness is unsearchable." Neither are my attempts owing to a strong hope of removing early impressions from the breasts of those, whose education instilled certain ideas into their minds from the moment they became capable of receiving them; for notwithstanding great and long-continued exertions on my part to do away Hindoo polytheism, though palpably gross and absurd, my success has been very partial. This experience, therefore, it may be suggested, ought to have been sufficient to discourage me from any other attempt of the kind; but it is my reverence for Christianity, and for the author of this religion, that has induced me to endeavour to vindicate it from the charge of Polytheism as far as my limited capacity and knowledge extend. It is indeed mortifying to my feelings to find a religion, that from its sublime doctrines and pure morality should be respected above all other systems, reduced almost to a level with Hindoo theology, merely by human creeds and prejudices; and from this cause brought to a comparison with the Paganism of ancient Greece; which, while it included a plurality of Gods, yet maintained that Θεός ἑστὶν ἓς, or "God is one," and that their numerous divine *persons* were all comprehended in that one Deity.

Having derived my own opinions on this subject entirely from the Scriptures themselves, I may perhaps be excused for the confidence with which I maintain them against those of so great a majority, who appeal to the same authority for theirs; inasmuch as I attribute the

different views, not to any inferiority of judgment compared with my own limited ability, but to the powerful effects of early religious impressions; for when these are deep, reason is seldom allowed its natural scope in examining them to the bottom. Were it a practice among Christians to study first the books of the Old Testament as found arranged in order, and to acquire a knowledge of the true force of scriptural phrases and expressions without attending to interpretations given by any sect; and then to study the New Testament, comparing the one with the other, Christianity would not any longer be liable to be encroached upon by human opinions.

I have often observed that English divines, when arguing with those that think freely on religion, quote the names of Locke and Newton as defenders of Christianity; but they totally forget that the Christianity which those illustrious persons professed did not contain the doctrine of the Trinity, which our divines esteem as the fundamental principle of this religion. For the conviction of the public as to the accuracy of this assertion, I beg to be allowed to extract here a few lines of their respective works, referring my readers to their publications upon religion for more complete information.

*Locke's Works*, Vol. VII. p. 421: "But that neither he nor others may mistake my book, this is that in short which it says—1st, That there is a faith that makes men Christians—2dly, That this faith is the believing 'Jesus of Nazareth to be the Messiah'—3rdly, That the believing Jesus to be the Messiah, includes in it a receiving him for our Lord and King, promised and sent from God; and so lays upon all his subjects an absolute and indispensable necessity of assenting to all that they can attain of the

knowledge that he taught, and of sincere obedience to all that he commanded."

*Sir I. Newton's Observations upon the Prophecies*, p. 262: "The Beasts and Elders therefore represent the Christians of all nations; and the worship of these Christians in their churches is here represented under the form of worshipping God and the Lamb in the Temple, God for his benefaction in creating all things, and the Lamb for his benefaction in redeeming us with his blood:—God as sitting upon the throne and living for ever, and the Lamb exalted above all by the merits of his death."

It cannot be alleged that these personages, in imitation of several Grecian philosophers, published these sentiments only in conformity to the vulgar opinion, and to the established religion of their country; for both the vulgar opinion and the religion of the government of England in their days were directly opposite to the opinions which these celebrated men entertained.

The mention of the name of Sir Isaac Newton, one of the greatest mathematicians (if not the greatest) that ever existed, has brought into my recollection a mathematical argument which I some time ago heard a divine adduce in support of the Trinity, and which I feel inclined to consider here, though I am afraid some of my readers may censure me for repeating an argument of this kind. It is as follows: that as three lines compose one triangle, so three persons compose one Deity. It is astonishing that a mind so conversant with mathematical truth as was that of Sir Isaac Newton, did not discover this argument in favour of the possible existence of a Trinity, brought to light by Trinitarians, considering that it must have lain so much in his way. If it did occur to him, its force may



possibly have given way to some such considerations as the following :—This analogy between the Godhead and a triangle, in the first instance, denies to God, equally with a line, any real existence ; for extension of all kinds, abstracted from position or relative situation, exists only in idea. Secondly, it destroys the unity which they attempt to establish between Father, Son, and Holy Ghost ; for the three sides of a triangle are conceived of as separate existences. Thirdly, it denies to each of the three persons of God, the epithet “ God,” inasmuch as each side cannot be designated a triangle ; though the Father of the universe is invariably called God in the strict sense of the term. Fourthly, it will afford to that sect among Hindoos who suppose God to consist of four persons or *ब्रह्मदेवता*, an opportunity of using the same mode of arguing, to shew the reasonableness of their sentiments, by comparing the compound Deity with the four sides of a quadrilateral figure. Fifthly, this manner of arguing may be esteemed better adapted to support the Polytheism of the majority of Hindoos, who believe in numerous persons under one Godhead ; for instead of comparing the Godhead with a triangle, a figure containing the fewest sides, and thereby proving the three persons of the Godhead, they might compare God with a polygon, more suitable to the dignified rank of the Deity, and thus establish the consistency with reason, of the belief, that the Godhead may be composed of numerous persons. Sixthly, this mode of illustration would, in fact, equally suit the Atheist as the Polytheist. For as the Trinity is represented by the three sides of a triangle, so the eternal revolution of nature without any divine person may be compared to the circle, which is considered as having no sides nor angles : or, Seventhly, as some great mathematicians consider the circle as a poly-


x 2

gon, having an infinite number of sides, the illustration of the Trinitarian doctrine by the form of the triangle will by analogy justify those sects, who maintain the existence of an infinite number of persons in the Godhead, in referring for an illustration of their opinions to the circular, or rather perhaps to the globular figure, in which is to be found an infinity of circles, formed each of an infinite number of sides.

As I was concluding this Appendix, a friend to the doctrine of the Trinity kindly lent me Serle's "*Horæ Solitariae*." I confine here my attention only to four or five arguments, which the author has adduced in the beginning of his work, and that for several reasons. 1st, Because a deliberate attention to the nature of the first-mentioned arguments may furnish the reader with a general idea of the rest, and justify me in neglecting them. 2ndly, Because such of the others as seem to me at all worthy of notice have been already considered and replied to; and 3rdly, Because I am unwilling to protract further discussion, which has already grown to a length far beyond my original intention.

At page 10, Mr. Serle alleges, that "God says by Moses in the book of *Genesis*, In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth; and then just afterwards, the Spirit moved upon the face of the waters. Here are three persons in one power; the beginning, God, and the Spirit." If a bare mention of the word "beginning" and "spirit," (or properly speaking, "wind,") in the two first verses of *Genesis*, justifies the numbering of them as two persons of God, how can we conscientiously omit the "water" mentioned in the same verse as coexistent with "spirit," making it the fourth person, and darkness, which is mentioned before spirit, as a fifth person of God: and if under

any pretence we are justified in classing "beginning," an abstract relation, as a person of God, how can we deny the same dignity to the "end," which is equally an abstract relation? Nay, the very words of chap. i. 8, of Revelation might be quoted to prove one of the persons of God to be the "ending:"—"I am Alpha and Omega, the BEGINNING and the ENDING, saith the Lord, which is, and which was, and which is to come, the Almighty." We have then God, the Beginning, the Spirit, and the Ending, four persons at least whom we must admit into the God-head, if Mr. Serle's opinion have any foundation.

Page 12, "They (the ancient Chaldee Jews and Cabbalists) expressed their idea of the Trinity by this particular type,  where the three jods denote Jah, Jah, Jah, or that each of three persons (according to our Athanasian Creed) is by himself Jah or Lord:—the point  $\cdot$  (kametz) as common to each, implies the divine nature in which the three persons equally existed; and the circle, inclosing all, was intended to exhibit the perfect unity, eternity, and conjunction, of the whole Trinity." This type, if it existed at any time, can bear various interpretations, Theistical, Polytheistical, or Atheistical; but in Hebrew and Chaldee, the sign which is generally used to denote the Deity has two jods only; a reference to the Targums of Jonathan and Onkelos, written in the Chaldee language, and to other Targums in Hebrew and Chaldee, will establish the fact beyond doubt. This practice, which, according to Mr. Serle's mode of arguing, establishes the duality of God, is entirely overlooked by him.

In the same page again he says, that "in a very ancient book of the Jews, the first person, or Hypostasis, is described as כתר Kather, the crown, or admirable and pro-

found intelligence; the second person חכמה Chochma, wisdom, or the intelligence illuminating the creation, and the second glory; and the third person בינה Binah, or the sanctifying intelligence, the worker of faith and the father of it." He immediately after this assertion notices in page 13, "they believed, taught, and adored three primordial existences in the Godhead, which they called sometimes מידות middoth, or *properties*, and sometimes ספירות sephiroth, or *numerations*." The force of truth here impels the author to contradict himself directly; since he at one time asserts that the Jews believed them to be the three *persons* of God, and again forgetting what he said, he affirms that the Jews called them *properties*, or *numeration* of properties. The fact is, that when the intercourse between the Jews and Greeks was great, the former, in imitation of some of the latter, entertained the idea that the Supreme Deity used ten superior intelligences or qualities in the creation of the world; namely, גדלות Greatness—גבורה Mightiness—תפארת Beauty—נצח Everlasting—הודו Glory—יסוד Foundation—מלכות Kingdom.\* But a Godhead consisting of ten persons not suiting Mr. Serle's hypothesis, he omits the seven last, and mentions only the three first, which he denominates a proof of the Trinity.

In page 14, Mr. Serle represents "R. Simeon and the famous Jonathan treating upon the Trisagion, or thrice holy, in the 6th chapter of *Isaiah*," as saying, "that the first Holy implies the Father, the second Holy the Son, and the third Holy the Holy Ghost." I therefore give the

\* This opinion is still to be found in the conversation as well as writings of the learned amongst Eastern theologians.

commentary of Jonathan,\* which I have been so fortunate as to procure, in order to shew how zeal in behalf of the Trinity has sometimes led men to forget the claims of care and prudence. Jonathan's targum on the term "Holy" thrice repeated in *Isaiah* vi. 3, is as follows: קדיש בשמי פרוםא עלאה בית שכןחיה קדיש על ארעא עובר גבורתיה קדיש לעלם ולעלמי עלמיה "Holy in the most high heavens, the place of his glory—Holy upon the earth, the work of his power—Holy for ever and ever and ever."

Again, in page 14, he says, that "The Jews before Christ had a title for the Godhead consisting of twelve letters, which Maimonides, the most learned of all their writers, owns to have been a compounded name, or name (as was common among the Rabbins) composed of the initial letters of the names. Galatinus from R. Hakkadosh, (who lived about A. D. 150, or rather from Porchetus Salvaticus, or Raymundus Martini,) believes that these twelve letters were בן ורוח קדיש אב, i. e. Father, Son, and Holy Spirit."

There is no impossibility in the existence of a name of God consisting of twelve letters, as is stated to have been the case on the authority of Maimonides, because we find different names of God, consisting of various numbers of letters. But Mr. Serle, on the authority of Galatinus, a Christian writer, represents these twelve letters as expressing the names of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. I therefore make a few remarks on this head. 1st, Mr. Serle himself expresses his doubts respecting the source

\* The copy which is now in my hands was printed in London, by Thomas Roycroft, in the year 1656. It contains, besides the targum of Jonathan, the original Hebrew text, together with the Septuagint, Syriac, and Arabic translations, each accompanied with a Latin interpretation.

from which Galatinus had obtained his information, "*whether from R. Hakkadosh, from Porchetus Salvaticus, or from Raymundus Martini.*" 2ndly, The construction of this sentence of twelve letters, is conformable to the European style of writing, but is quite foreign to Hebrew idiom, which requires a conjunction before  $\text{בן}$ , or Son; but the omission of this shews that it must have been invented by one more accustomed to the idiom of European languages, than to that of the Hebrew. 3rdly, Maimonides, the original authority of Mr. Serle, owns that these twelve letters were the initials of other names; whereas Mr. Serle in the explanation of them represents them as composing in themselves three complete names, Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, instead of giving a name for each of the twelve letters.

I am not aware how many arguments and illustrations of similar weight and importance to those already discussed may still remain, that have not been brought to my notice; but I trust the inquiry has proceeded sufficiently far to justify me in still adhering to the unity of God as the doctrine taught alike in the Old and in the New Testaments.

I now conclude this Appendix, with repeating my prayer, that a day may soon arrive, when religion shall not be a cause of difference between man and man, and when every one will regard the Precepts of Jesus as the sole Guide to Peace and Happiness.

P. S. Dr. Prideaux, in the fourth volume of his "Connection," (which has very lately come into my hands,) takes a different view of Isaiah, ch. ix. vers. 6, 7, from that which has been offered in the preceding pages. After quoting the words of the prophet according to the English Version, he says, "Christians all hold that this is spoken of the Messiah; and Jonathan, in the Targum which is truly his, doth on that place say the same." Hereby he gives out that this prophecy, including the epithets "Wonderful, Counsellor, the Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, and the Prince of Peace," is applied by Jonathan, as by Christians, to the Messiah:—I therefore give here the explanation given by Jonathan to verses 6 and 7, which will sufficiently shew the error Dr. Prideaux has committed.

אמר נביא לבית דוד ארי רבי אחילד לנא בר אחיהב לנא  
וקביל אוריתא עלוהי למטרא ואחקרי שמיה מן קרב מפליא עזר  
אלהא גברא קים לעלמא משיחא דשלמא יסגי עלנא ביומוהי:  
סגי רבו לעבדי אוריתא ולנפרי שלמא ליתסוף על כורסי דוד ועל  
מלכותיה לאתקנא יחיר ולמבנה ברינא ובוכותא מכען ועד עלמא  
במימרא ד" צבאות תתעבר דא:

"The prophet says, to the house of David a child is born, to us a son is given, and he will take upon himself the preservation of the law; from the presence of the causer of wonderful counsels, the great God enduring for ever, his name will be called the anointed, (in Heb. Messiah,) in whose days peace shall be multiplied upon us." "Greatness shall be multiplied to those who obey the law, and to those who keep peace, there will be no end to the throne of David and of his government: for establishing and for building it with judgment and with justice now and for ever."

Here Jonathan, in direct opposition to Christians, denies to the Son so born, the epithets "Wonderful, Counsellor, Mighty God, and Everlasting Father;" and applies to him only the title of "the Prince of Peace," (nearly synonymous with Messiah,) on account of his preserving peace during his reign, as was promised of the Messiah. (2 Kings xx. 19, "Is it not good (says Hezekiah) if peace and truth be in my days?" 2 Chron. xxxii. 26, "The wrath of the Lord came not upon them in the days of Hezekiah.") This application of the term anointed (or Messiah) is made to Hezekiah in the same manner as to other eminent kings, often called Messiah in the Sacred Writings:—1 Samuel xii. 3, "Behold here I am! witness against me before the Lord, and his anointed (or his Messiah), the king." 2 Samuel xxiii. 1, "David the son of Jesse said, and the man who was raised up on high, the Messiah of the God of Jacob," &c. Ch. xxii. 51, "He is the tower of salvation for his King, and sheweth mercy to his Messiah, unto David, and to his seed for evermore." 1 Samuel ii. 10, "The Lord shall judge the ends of the earth; and he shall give strength unto his King, and exalt the horn of his Messiah." Psalm xx. 6, "Now know I that the Lord saveth his Messiah." Isaiah xlv. 1, "Thus saith the Lord to his Messiah, to Cyrus." The reign of Hezekiah was so accompanied with peace and success, that some Jewish commentators entertained the opinion that Hezekiah was really the last Messiah promised by God.

R. Hillel, אמר רבי הלל אין לחם משיח לישראל שכבר אכלוהו  
בימי חזקיהו

"There is no Messiah for the Israelites, for they enjoyed it (i. e. they had him) at the time of Hezekiah."



If Trinitarians still insist, in defiance of the above authorities, and under pretence of the word "anointed" or "Messiah," found in the Targum of Jonathan, that his interpretation should be understood of the expected Messiah, then as far as depends upon the interpretation given by him of verses 6 and 7, they must be compelled to relinquish the idea that he expected a divine deliverer. Moreover, all other celebrated Jewish writers, some of whom are more ancient than Jonathan, apply the passage in question to Hezekiah, some of them differing however from him in the application of the epithets contained in verse 6.

Talmud Sanhedrim, ch. 11, "God said, Let Hezekiah, who has five names, take vengeance upon the king of Assyria, who has taken upon himself five names also." R. Sholomo follows the annotation made by Shammai. "For a child is born, &c. Though Ahaz was wicked, his son, who was born to him to be a king in his stead, shall be righteous, the government of God and his yoke shall be on his shoulder, because he shall obey the law and keep the commandments thereof, and shall incline his shoulder to the burden of God.—And he calls his name, &c. God, who is the wonderful counsellor, and the mighty and everlasting Father, called his name the Prince of Peace, for peace and truth shall be in his days." \*

\* It is worth noticing, that "to be called" and "to be" do not invariably signify the same thing; since the former does not always imply that the thing is in reality what it is called, but the use of it is justified when the thing is merely *taken notice of* in that view. See Luke i. 36, "This is the sixth month with her who was called (that is, reputed) barren." Isaiah lxi. 3, "That they might be called (or accounted) trees of righteousness." This is more especially the case

The reader will not suppose the application of the terms "wonderful counsellor, mighty God, everlasting Father, and prince of peace," to Hezekiah, to be unscriptural when he refers to page 283 of this work, and considers the following passages, in which the same epithets are used for human beings, and even for inanimate objects: 2 Chron. ii. 9, "The house which I am about to build shall be wonderful great." Micah iv. 9, "Is there no king in thee? Is thy counsellor perished?" Genesis xiii. 6, "Hear us: thou art a Mighty Prince amongst us." Judges ix. 13, "Should I leave my wine which cheereth God and man?" that is, master and servant. 2 Thess. ii. 4, "Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God." Gen. xlix. 26, "To the utmost bound of the everlasting hills." 1 Samuel iv. 8, "Who shall deliver us out of the hands of these mighty gods?" which Cruden interprets of the Jewish ark. Isaiah xii. 11—28, [xlili. 28,] "Therefore I have profaned the princes of the sanctuary."

I wonder how those who found their opinion respecting the Trinity on terms applied in common to God and creatures, can possibly overlook the plain meaning of the term "Son," or "Only-begotten," continually applied to the Saviour throughout the whole of the New Testament; for should we understand the term God, in its strict sense, as denoting the First Cause, (that is, a being not born nor begotten,) we must necessarily confess that the idea of God is as incompatible with the idea of the "Son," or

when the phrase "to be called" has for its subject not a person, but the *name* of a person." See Deut. xxv. 10, "And his name shall be called in Israel, *the house of him that hath his shoe loosed.*" Genesis xlviii. 16, "Let my name be named on them."

“Only-begotten,” as entity is with non-entity ; and therefore that to apply both terms to the same being will amount to the grossest solecism in language.

As to their assertion, that there are found in the Scriptures two sets of terms and phrases, one declaring the humanity of Jesus and another his deity, and that he must therefore be acknowledged to have possessed a twofold nature, human and divine, I have fully noticed it in pp. 167—169, 252, 253, pointing out such passages as contain two sets of terms and phrases applied also to Moses and even to the chiefs of Israel and to others ; and that, if it is insisted upon, that each word in the Sacred Writings should be taken in its strict sense, Moses and others, equally with the Saviour, must be considered as gods, and the religion of the Jews and Christians will appear as Polytheistical as that of Heathens.

Although there is the strictest consistency between all the passages in the sacred books, Trinitarians, with a view to support their opinion, charge them first with inconsistency, and then attempt to reconcile the alleged contradiction by introducing the doctrine of the union of two natures, divine and human, in one person, forgetting that at the same time the greatest incongruity exists between the nature of God and man, according to both revelation and common sense.

If Christianity inculcated a doctrine which represents God as consisting of three persons, and appearing sometimes in the human form, at other times in a bodily shape like a dove, no Hindoo, in my humble opinion, who searches after truth, can conscientiously profess it in preference to Hindooism ; for that which renders the modern Hindoo system of religion absurd and detestable, is, that it represents the divine nature, though one, (एक ब्रह्म), as

consisting of many persons, capable of assuming different forms for the discharge of different offices. I am, however, most firmly convinced, that Christianity is entirely free from every trace of Polytheism, whether gross or refined. I therefore enjoy the approbation of my conscience in publishing the Precepts of this religion as the source of Peace and Happiness.

*Finis.*

---

*Printed by G. SMALLFIELD, Hackney.*







APR 30 1984

~~JUN 1 1984~~

~~JUN 1 1986~~

~~JUN 1 1987~~